

# ***PICTURES from the PAST***

## **Bible Stories for Children**

By the Late Sister L. K. Poole,  
Author of *"The Ten Camels"* and *"The Son of the Highest"*

## **PREFACE**

As I have pondered on Thy gracious Word,  
And there have learned of Thee Almighty God  
I've longed some witness small to give for Thee,  
That in the days to come, wherever I may be,  
May to some troubled soul sweet comfort bring,  
Or teach some little one Thy praise to sing;  
To help them see the wonders of Thy love,  
Thy wisdom, justice, mercy and power prove.

The types and shadows which are written here –  
Stories so sweet no fiction can compare –  
Show how in simple lives of faithful men,  
Thou hast revealed aforetime Thy great plan.  
Now, by Thy help and power, loaned to me for this hour,  
I'd seek in simple words those types to trace,  
To show some of Thy glory and Thy grace,  
That stooped to use the sinful world of man.

To Thee be all the glory, if such there should ensue,  
These pictures are Thy handiwork, 'tis true.  
Mine but the pen Thou hast been pleased to use  
To show the perfect symbols Thou didst choose.  
For Thou dost deign to use the weak and small  
And yet the worldly wise Thou leavest all.  
I praise Thee, if perchance this work should bring  
Some tribute to my gracious God and King.

*L.K. Poole*

# PICTURES FROM THE PAST

## Chapter 1: The First Picture of All

A little girl came flying in from school one autumn day. She was slender and fair and her blue eyes were sparkling as she threw her arms around her mother and gave her a hearty squeeze.

“Oh, Mummy! Guess what!”

“What am I to guess?” laughed Mrs Grey, returning the hug. She was a plump, motherly woman with hair that was fast turning grey and a merry smile that seemed to start at the corners of her mouth and extend till her whole face was laughing.

“We are going to have a new kind of a play at school and I am to be in charge of it. Miss Norton says it is to ‘stimulate our imaginations’. What do you think she means by that, Mummy?”

“From what I have seen of you, young lady, I do not think your imagination needs any stimulating. It seems quite active enough already. What kind of a play is this to be?”

“It’s to be a Cinderella play, Mummy, and I have to pick the children to play the different parts. Miss Norton said I must not pick them because they are my friends or because they liked the parts but to choose them to fit the parts I gave them. How can I do that, Mummy?”

“Well, dear, I should say she meant to choose a pretty girl for Cinderella, and girls who could look haughty and cross for the sisters and stepmother. Then you would want a small, fair child for the fairy and so on” Mother answered, and they were soon deep in discussions of the coming play.

“Who is writing the play for you, Linnet?” Mrs. Grey inquired.

“That is where the fun comes in, Mummy. No one is writing it. Miss Norton read us the story and then said we were to choose our own costumes from things we could get at home and that we were to imagine we were really the person whose part we play and say just what they would say and act as they would. I think it will be lots of fun, don’t you? Of course, No one will be there but the class, and those who do not take part have to vote for the best actor.”

Mother laughed. “It will be interesting to say the least, if all do their part.” Linnet was all excitement that evening. She could think of nothing and talk of nothing but the play, and when bedtime came Mother saw that her little girl must get her mind off that play if there was to be any sleep. So when Linnet was all ready for bed she said, “I think Mother had better read you a story to take your mind off your plans for tomorrow, dear. What shall it be?”

"I was just wishing you would tell me a Bible story, Mummy, or read me one" Linnet replied. "I am so anxious to have our play turn out well, I cannot think of anything else."

So, when her little girl was all ready for bed, Mother took her work and seating herself by the bedside she said, "There is no reason why we cannot have a nice talk tonight, dear, for Daddy has a nasty headache and has taken some medicine and gone to rest, so I can bring my mending here and do it while we talk." Then she added, "I was just thinking as I listened to your plans for your play about another great play of the long ago. It would be better to call it a picture, perhaps."

"Do you mean one of the pictures God made, Mummy? I guess they were something like our play only the people did not have to pretend."

"Yes, Linnet. There was this difference, however. When you have a play you take a story that was written long ago and act the parts. Your picture is really a copy of one that was either lived or imagined long ago. God's pictures were not copies, though they have had copies since, or at least some of them have. The people who played parts in them did not know they were making pictures. They just lived their lives from day to day and God guided them, so that their actions would make the picture He wished. Those who made the pictures had a special blessing, too."

"What was the first picture God made, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"The very first picture of all was the Garden of Eden" Mrs. Grey replied.

"What was it a picture of, Mummy?"

"Not so fast, sweetheart. I am going to ask you to answer that question yourself by and by," laughed her mother. "First let us look at the picture. You remember the story of the Creation, I am sure. It is the very first part of your book *The Ten Camels*, and I am sure you have not forgotten that."

"Indeed I haven't, Mummy. I have read it over and over till I can almost say it off by heart," Linnet smiled, snuggling down under the covers.

"You will remember then that God prepared the world first and then He '*made a garden, eastward in Eden*'. This garden was specially prepared. Every tree and plant that was needed to keep people healthy and to supply the materials to make their bodies grow to perfect manhood and womanhood was there. It was never too cold and never too hot. All the animals could come to the garden and they all obeyed Adam and Eve, who were perfect."

"Mummy, how do we know that the story of Adam and Eve is true? My teacher says that there were cavemen and women thousands of years before that. She often reads us pieces about how people were just like animals and that they found how to make fire by an accident. Of course, I just take them as stories, but she seems to really believe it. How can we be sure that the Bible is true?"

"A few years ago, dear one, we had to just take the Bible on faith, but in the last few years men have found proof that it is - as we have always believed - the Word of God. Men have gone to the part of the world which the Bible claims was the first home of man, and history has agreed that this is so. There they found proof that our Bible is true."

“What kind of proof did they find, Mummy?” Linnet was growing interested and the play was being forgotten. “It was nice of them to try and show people that the Bible was not just a story.”

“They did not go with that thought, dear. They were all men from our big schools and colleges and they started out to prove that the stories in the Bible were all men’s imagination. Babylon was the oldest nation men have any record of, so they went to the place where the people of Babylon used to live. There they began to dig among the ruins of the old cities to try and find what the people there were like, how they lived and what they thought. They found many things that surprised them.”

“What sort of things, Mummy?”

Well, for one thing they found the Tower of Babel. They had always thought that story was a fable, but they found the ruins of the tower and so they had to admit that what the Bible said about it was true, for it was even built of the material the Bible had said was used in it.”

“What was it made of, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“Genesis 11, verse 3, says, ‘*They had brick for stone and slime had they for mortar.*’ That means that they made bricks of the clay and fastened them together with the slimy mud which dried hard. And that was how it was built. Some years ago the papers showed photographs of the ruins, which proved that the tower had been very large but had never been finished. Around the ruins of Babel they also found tablets made of hard baked clay which the people used to write on, just as we use paper.”

“How could they write on that, Mummy?”

“They mixed the clay with water into a smooth paste, not unlike piecrust, and rolled it into thin sheets. While it was still soft, they took a stick that was sharpened and pressed the letters into the clay. When they had finished what they wanted to write they baked the clay tablet in an oven or put it in the sun to dry until it was as hard as china plates. They fastened the plates together as we fasten paper, with clips or rings or cord through holes. They had books made of several tablets fastened together. They found there the story of the Creation and of Adam and Eve and the flood.

“While the stories were different in some ways to that which is in our Bible because they were written as stories and not as a history, they proved that the creation was common knowledge to the people of Babylon. We have many stories written about the life of Queen Victoria that are not really true but it all goes to prove there was such a woman. The explorers were surprised to find that even that long ago the people wrote books and kept records and even sent postcards, just as we do now, except that they used the tablets for paper. It was well they did too, for paper would have been destroyed while the tablets have lasted thousands of years.”

“Did they have post offices, Mummy?”

“If not offices they at least had postmen who carried their letters. Every place mentioned in the Bible has been found of late years. They have even found out that Adam and Eve

could write and did write; the true story of their own creation, and that the book of Genesis in our Bible was written partly by Adam, partly by Noah and his sons and partly by Abraham and Isaac and Jacob. They have proved that the tablets they wrote were kept by the children of Israel and that Moses copied them, word for word, in the book of Genesis, which he gave to the children of Israel to keep in the Ark of the Covenant<sup>(\*)</sup>. Now we do not have to just **believe** the Bible is true, for we have proof that it is.”

“I am glad you told me that, Mummy, for I was beginning to wonder about it. Our teacher seemed so sure.”

“You need not wonder any more. When you are a little older I will give you books that even show photos of tablets they have found. The time has come when all must admit the truth of God’s Word. Now to go back to the story, which you know so well. First, though, you said your teacher told you what a hard time the people had before they knew how to make fire. Adam and Eve knew that and they used fire.”

“How do we know that, Mummy?”

“Must you have proof for everything, dear one?”

“Well, you see Mummy, Mary and Jennie and I often talk about those things and sometimes the other children at school ask us about them. They all hear teacher’s stories and wonder about them. When I tell them things like that, they say ‘How do you know?’ If I say ‘Mummy told me’ they say, ‘What does she know about it? The teacher knows more than she does.’ If I can tell them the proof they are satisfied.

“A little leaven leaveneth the whole lump” Mrs Grey said and then explained. “How did God shut Adam and Eve out of the garden, Linnet? Do you remember?”

“He set an angel to keep the garden and the angel had a fiery sword that turned in every direction. I guess that angel got pretty tired, Mummy.”

Mrs Grey laughed. “An angel may be anything that does God’s will. The word ‘*angel*’ means ‘a messenger’, dear. Possibly the angel God used there was a volcano. However what I meant to show you was the first use of fire. Now the next mention of fire in God’s Word was in regard to Abel, the son of Adam and Eve. How did he make his sacrifice to God, Linnet?”

“Why, of course. He burned it. I remember now.”

“That is your proof, Linnet. So we see men did not have to freeze and suffer to learn about fire. To be sure they did find many ways of starting it, such as rubbing sticks together or striking stones to get a spark before matches were invented. In the early days they had to carry coals from one place to another.

“Now dear, I think it is time you thought about getting some sleep. First, however, can you think yet what the Garden of Eden was a picture of?”

“Would it be a picture of the Kingdom when everyone is good and happy, Mummy?”

---

<sup>(\*)</sup> See ‘*Discoveries in Babylon*’ by Wing-Commander Wiseman

“Yes, dear. The Bible says ‘They shall say this land which was desolate has become like the garden of Eden’” (Ezek.36:35)

Linnet had forgotten all about her worry and fell sweetly asleep while Mrs Grey finished her mending.

## **Chapter 2: More Pictures from the Past**

It seemed Jehovah would a series paint  
Of living pictures, read by every saint  
And understood, when in the harvest time  
He should reveal His purposes sublime  
To earnest men. Each scene should be a view  
Of something He proposed, in time, to do;  
Some feature of His great Eternal plan  
To ransom and redeem the race of man,  
And, in His favour, all to reinstate  
Who should have wearied of their lost estate –  
Of their bereft condition – and to give  
Them pardon and once more the right to live.  
Oh, help me Lord to show, in scenes sublime,  
The types and shadows of that ancient time.

Mrs Grey noticed that her little girl was very quiet and thoughtful when she returned from school the following afternoon, but as she had brought a little playmate home to spend a while playing, there was no opportunity to inquire into the success of the play. Then it was dinner time and all the family were present, and Linnet was far too shy in the presence of her older brothers and sister to speak of the day’s endeavours. It was not till the work was all cleared away and the Story Hour had come that Mother had a chance to ask her little girl the reason for her quiet mood.

“Why are you so quiet tonight, Linnet?” she asked. “Did the play not prove a success?”

“It did not go as well as I hoped, Mummy. The girls did well but the boys acted rather smart and cut up so much that it spoiled everything. They simply would not behave and the teacher got really cross with them and that stopped the fun. I wonder why boys never seem to enter into the spirit of a game like girls do. Miss Norton says they never do.”

“Perhaps they were just a little self-conscious and afraid of ridicule,” Mrs Grey answered. “I have noticed that in boys before. Then they do like to show off a bit at times. I am sorry it spoiled your fun, dear, but life is like that. Things never do turn out just as we would like them to. Don’t let it get you down though, Linnet. After all, it was just a game and should not become too serious.”

“I guess you are right, Mummy. Anyway, teacher said I chose very well when I picked the characters for the play and she said it was not my fault the boys would not behave. I walked home from school with her but Nellie was with us so I could not say much. Mummy, please tell me some more about God’s pictures. I wonder if the characters He chose ever disappointed Him.”

"They had no chance to be self-conscious, dear, for they did not know that they were making pictures. You know the nicest photos we ever get and the most natural are taken when we do not know it.

"There are a few little pictures we might have a look at as we pass them by. One is found in the kindness of God in showing Adam and Eve how to make clothes out of the skins of the animals. Of course, I know your teacher would tell you that the people who lived in the earliest days had long hair all over them like the animals have, to keep them warm, but God's Word says that God Himself made them coats of the skins of animals and clothed them."

"Mummy, may I see that for myself, in my own Bible? I'd like to mark it so I can find it and show it to Jennie and Mary," Linnet said and ran for her Bible.

Mother helped her find Genesis 3:21 and Linnet underlined it with red pencil.

"Would that be the Heavenly Father Himself, Mummy, or the Logos?" she asked.

"I should think it would be the Logos for He was the special Messenger of God in all His dealings with men, dear. We are told that '*No man hath seen God at any time*', but the things the great Logos did at God's command are spoken of as if God Himself had done them. Then the discoveries in Babylon give us reason to believe that Adam wrote that part of the Bible himself and signed it by his own hand. He would see the Logos and know His power and so would speak of Him as 'The Lord God', and the Logos would not explain just them that He was just the representative of the Greater One – Our Heavenly Father Himself."

"Mummy, when you and Daddy were reading the book about the things that were found in Babylon, I heard you say something about a part of the Bible that was thought to have been given to Adam by the Logos. What part was that? I would like to know it and mark it in my Bible", Linnet said.

"Well you see, dear, the tablets found which were written in the very earliest days were mostly signed and dated by the writers. It was noticed that the time was marked by something that had happened about the time the tablet was written, for they had no dates such as we have. The man who wrote that book noticed that the first chapter of Genesis was a simple and direct statement of how God had made the earth and prepared it for man. He saw that it was written before the days were marked by the rising of the sun and moon as ours are, and that the sun had not even been named but was called '*A great light to rule the day*', and the moon was spoken of as '*A lesser light to rule the night*.' Then he noticed that it said '*The Lord God said*' when not even Adam was there, and only God Himself and the Logos and the angels could possibly know what God said. Then, in studying that chapter he saw that it ended, as all the old tablets did, with the words, '*These are the generations of*' (Gen.2:4) which they have found to mean in our language 'These are the written records of,' but there was no name after the words. So that tablet had no signature to show who wrote it but it is dated with the words, '*In the day that the Lord God made the earth and the heavens* '. These things made him sure that the first chapter of our Bible must have been written by the Logos Himself and given to Adam to start the records. From it Adam may have learned to write, for the next part of Genesis tells things that only Adam could know."

“What sort of things, Mummy? See, I have marked the verse which is said to be the end of that tablet. It’s nice to think that the great Logos wrote that chapter Himself. I love my Bible more than ever now. It’s like a letter from God.”

“Well, dear, seeing no one but Adam and Eve ever lived in the Garden of Eden, no one else could possibly know what part of the garden the Tree of Knowledge was in, or what kind of trees grew there, or the words of God about the tree, or who named the animals, or how Adam fell asleep and wakened to find Eve with him.”

“And no one but Eve could know what the serpent said, or where he was when he talked to Eve, could they, Mummy?”

“That is right, dear one, and only Adam and Eve could tell us of God’s words when He sent them out of the garden and punished them. Then in the first verse of Genesis 5 we have what the explorers tell us is the signature of Adam himself to the story of his creation and the date he wrote it.”

“When was it written, Mummy?”

“Verse 26 of Chapter 4 of Genesis says, *‘To Seth also was born a son and he called his name Enos; then men began to call upon the name of the Lord.’* This is followed by Adam’s signature – *‘This is the book of the generations (written records) of Adam.’* This shows it was written soon after Enos was born. Now Adam knew who taught him to make clothes but he did not know that God could just as easily have taught him to make the clothes by cutting the wool off the sheep, twisting it into yarn and weaving it into cloth as they soon learned to do. God had a reason in showing Adam and Eve that they could take the skins of the animals after they killed them and use them for a covering. He wished to show them that their sin had caused them to be turned out of the Garden where it was always warm and made them feel ashamed of their smooth, soft skin and that only by the death of another creature could that sin be covered. In this way He gave them their first hint that only by the death of *‘the seed of the woman’* could that sin be covered and forgotten.

“God gave them another picture to help them understand, for when Abel wished to show his love for God and his wish to have God’s favour, he killed a lamb and burned it as a sacrifice. God showed that He accepted that sacrifice but He refused the sacrifice of Cain, who burned fruit and vegetables from his garden. In this way God was showing them that *‘Without the shedding of blood there is no remission of sins’.*”

“What does ‘Remission’ mean, Mummy?”

“It means the ‘taking away’ of sin. It means more than just to forgive sins. God was showing that the death of Jesus in place of Adam would take away all the sins of the people. Just as erasing something out of your book takes away the words you have written. It was meant to help the people to understand that the way ‘The seed of the woman’ would bruise the serpent’s head would be to erase all his work and destroy him, by taking Adam’s place and giving His life to cover Adam’s sin. So Abel’s sacrifice of a lamb for his sins when he wished to talk to God was a picture of the sacrifice God would accept for Adam’s sin.”



"How did God show Abel that his sacrifice was all right, Mummy? The picture in the Bible Story Book I got for Christmas shows the smoke from the burning lamb going up to heaven, and the smoke from the fruit Cain offered going down on the ground."

"That is just a picture, dear. It is possible that when Abel wished God's help in something he wanted to do, he offered a lamb and the help was given. Cain then offered fruit but did not receive the help he wished and was angry. He did not try to find out the reason why God did not answer him but gave way to temper. The Bible says God saw his anger and said, '*Why are you angry Cain, and why does your face look sad? If you do well you will be accepted but if you do not do right the sin is yours.*' Cain could easily have exchanged some of his fruit for a lamb if he had wished."

"Was Cain just a little boy, Mummy? Mary said he **was** and that he did not mean to hurt his brother."

Mrs Grey smiled. "That was what I was told when I was a child, too, Linnet, but the Word of God proves that they were both grown men and over a hundred years old. They would be counted very old men now, dear, but people lived much longer then."

"Does it say how old they were, Mummy?"

"No, dear. It says that Seth was given to Adam and Eve to take the place of Cain and Abel and that Adam was one hundred and thirty years old when Seth was born. As Cain and Abel were the oldest children of Adam and Eve and were born soon after they were put out of the garden, they would be over a hundred years old. There is little doubt that both were married to their sisters and had children, though Abel's children are not mentioned in the Bible, which gives only the sons of Seth and Cain."

"Why does it not give the names of all the people, Mummy?"

"Because it would take up too much room. The only names given are those that were necessary to show how many years it was from the time Adam was created to the flood and from the flood till there was a means found for numbering the years. By studying these records, those who really wished to know God's plans and purposes could tell when it was time for Jesus to come and set up His Kingdom."

"How could we tell by that, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"Because God said '*The seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord*' – that means that the seventh thousand years from the time Adam was created would be the beginning of the Kingdom of God. The commandment, '*Six days shalt thou labour and do all thy work but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord thy God; in it thou shalt do no work*' was meant as a picture to show how many years God would allow sin to continue. So He gave us the records found in the Bible because He knew that there would be many people – like your teacher – who would be deceived by those who think they are wiser than God and so believe that the world is many millions of years old.

"That is why it is good to know that the 'stones are crying out' and telling all who will listen that the Bible is true. Now dear, your Daddy is waiting for me to come so we can study together, and it is time you went to sleep. Tomorrow I will try and tell you of a big picture God made and what it meant."

So Linnet went to get ready for bed and Mother joined the little group that was gathering to study the truths of God's Word.

### Chapter 3: The Great Rain

Why do we find this picture in God's Word?  
Hast Thou a purpose then Almighty God  
In giving us the story of the flood?  
Some lesson that Thou wouldst have understood?  
*"As in the days of Noah"* men went on  
Their carefree way, unmindful of the dawn  
So soon to break, but built and planted seed  
And to God's faithful servant paid no heed;  
So, in the close of this dark age of time,  
Men shall know nothing of Thy Word Divine  
Nor of Thy purpose for the sons of men,  
But go upon their way as they did then.

Although God's prophets have – at His command –  
Given fair warning in each tongue and land;  
Men have the past experience forgot  
And their own will and pleasure they have sought.  
They have oppressed and robbed the innocent  
And for their selfish ends their lives have spent.  
Once more grim giants stalking thru' the land  
Have crushed the poor and old on every hand,  
Oppressed their fellow men and trod them down,  
They hoard their wealth away in every town.

Again the warning, thru' God's Word is given  
Yet they refuse the voice that speaks from heaven.  
The force prepared shall sweep them all away  
And usher in the Great Millennial Day.  
Yet Christ's true Church find shelter in the Ark  
While clouds are gathering. Soon the night so dark  
Will sweep across the world. None shall escape  
The punishment that from the clouds shall leap  
Save those who hide beneath His sheltering wing,  
They shall go forth once more His praise to sing.

#### *Types and Shadows*

"Mummy, come quick and watch the storm", Linnet called on the afternoon following our last story. Great black clouds had piled up in the western sky and lightning flashes shot across the inky blackness. "Do you think I had better go to school, Mummy? I do not think I could get there before the rain starts."

"No, darling. You had better stay at home this afternoon. It is bad enough for Daddy and Sandy to have to go. I am glad they do not have to walk today for they could hardly get to work before the storm breaks. I do not think many children will face it this afternoon", Mrs Grey answered as she watched the swiftly approaching storm from the window.

"I do love a storm, Mummy. It gives me such a nice, thrilly feeling to see the lightning and hear the thunder."

"It is nice to watch it from a safe shelter, Linnet. But I always feel sorry for the little birds and for people who have to be out in it. There comes the rain now", as several great drops struck the window pane, driven by a strong wind. "I would hate to have to be out in that without protection", she added, as the storm struck in all its fury and they watched as the trees in the avenue bent almost to the ground before the force of the wind.

"I wonder if it was like that when the great flood came, Mummy. Would you tell me the story about the flood as we wash up the dishes? I will wipe them for you."

"Very well, dear one. We will have to do them all ourselves for sister has gone out to see a friend. We will pile them all up here where they will be handy and then we can talk as we work."

"I am rather glad I could not go to school for I can help you and have a story too", the little girl remarked as they hastily scraped and packed the dishes ready to wash and dry them. "There now, Mummy. They are all ready and the table is cleaned off too, so we can talk."

"Better run up first and see if the rain is coming in any of the windows, dear. You can do that while I get the water ready" her Mother answered.

"It was coming in a bit at the front windows, Mummy, so I shut them", Linnet said a minute later as she returned from her errand. Now for my story, Mummy."

"I guess it will be rather a talk than a story, dear one, for you know the story of the flood pretty well. I am sure you have not forgotten why the flood was sent."

"No, Mummy. I know it was because the people had become so very wicked and the evil angels had come down to the earth and had taken human forms and married the women, and their children were giants and very wicked and cruel. I read all about them last night in my *'Ten Camels'* story book after you left me, and I got to thinking about the little children who were drowned. Why did God let them die too? They could not have been so very wicked. At least not the ones who were not the children of the bad angels."

"I think that letting them die with their parents was a real kindness on our Heavenly Father's part", Mother answered. "Suppose some great disaster were to come to the world today, would you rather fall asleep with Daddy and Mother and sleep till the kingdom comes and then wake up in a world where there is no trouble or sickness at all, or remain awake and have to get along all alone with No one to make clothes or cook meals for you?"

"I would far sooner fall asleep too, Mummy. I see what you mean. When the time comes all the parents and their poor little babies will wake up together and neither the babies or their mothers will be lonesome. They will have to do what is right then, will they not, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. They will be taught the laws of God, and Satan will be bound so that he cannot tempt them. Only the children of the wicked angels, who were fierce and cruel

and ugly, will not be wakened up. They would only make trouble. Perhaps there will be some way to let the people see the result of Satan's rule."

"Maybe they will have movie pictures, Mummy. Then they could see what terrible things have happened."

"That is quite possible, Linnet. The moving pictures are one of the blessings of the new age, and while they do a lot of harm now, the time is coming when they will be used to teach people."

"Mummy, you said that you would tell me the story about one of God's pictures. Was the flood a picture, too?"

"Indeed it was, Linnet. We know that because Jesus Himself told us so. He said *'As it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be in the presence of the Son of Man. For as in the days that were before the flood, they were eating and drinking, marrying and giving in marriage until the day that Noah entered into the Ark and knew not until the flood came and took them all away, so shall the presence of the Son of Man be.'*"

"But they have always done those things, Mummy." *Linnet was puzzled.*

"Jesus did not mean that it was wrong to eat and drink and marry, Linnet. He meant that the people did not realise that they were in any danger. 'These things have always happened and always will happen. The sky is no darker – at least not much – and Noah is just trying to scare us with his ark. The world has gone on just the same always and it always will.' In some of the great churches today they have a part in their service which goes like this: 'As it was in the beginning, is now and ever shall be, world without end, Amen.'"

"Why Mummy, I heard a minister say that over the radio this morning", Linnet laughed. "I wondered what he meant."

"He meant that things have always been the same and that they always will be. You see they do not realise that there is a great change coming. As in the days that were before the flood **'they knew not'** until the flood came and took them all away. That was what the flood pictured, Linnet. That people would get so used to the present way of living, with wars and strikes and trouble, that when we tried to tell them that these things are a sign that Jesus has come and is setting up His Kingdom, they would say 'These things have always happened and always will. There have always been wars and sickness and death', and they will not know till the Kingdom has come that Jesus has taken up His rule and is breaking up all the nations to build His Kingdom to take their place. Just as God swept away all the old order with the flood, so the trouble that is going on all around us is sweeping away the old systems to make room for the Kingdom of God."

"But Noah told them what was going to happen, Mummy. They could see him working on the ark too. They must have known that he would not build a big boat like that for nothing."

"They just thought he was crazy, dear. It does look foolish to build a boat on dry land. He told them of God's message and that they would be punished for the wicked things they were doing, but they laughed at him and paid no attention. God always gives people a

chance to know about His plans but only those who really serve and trust Him pay any attention” Mrs Grey explained.

“People think we are foolish too, Mummy. The children often laugh at me when I try and tell them about the coming Kingdom.”

“You are in good company, Linnet, for they laughed at Noah and Moses and Elijah and they even laughed at Jesus and the disciples. Paul knew what it was like to be laughed at for trying to warn the people when trouble was coming, and he said *‘I am glad to be called a fool for Christ’s sake.’* God’s prophets were all called fools and laughed at by those they tried to warn but there were always some who listened and believed. They were the only ones who were really worth saving. Remember that, when they laugh at you. There are not so many people laughing now, however. When it began to rain the people of Noah’s day stopped laughing and ran to find the ark, but the ark was floating away and the door was fastened shut. When in Jerusalem, after Jesus died, the armies of the Romans surrounded the city, the people stopped laughing and tried to get away but it was too late. Those who had believed in Jesus had left the city before that and were teaching all who would hear, in other places, about the coming Kingdom and how to have a part in it.”

“But Mummy, that was thousands of years ago. How could they teach that the Kingdom was coming then?”

“It was coming then, but not for a long time. The disciples did not know how many years must pass before the Kingdom would be set up. They knew that if people would have a part in the Kingdom, they must stop their evil deeds and try to serve God. It seems a very long time to us, Linnet, but it really was not long. You see, No one ever had to wait more than a lifetime for the Kingdom. If a man was forty when he heard about it and turned to God, he only had to wait for about forty years and then sleep till he was wakened to take his part in the Kingdom. If the disciples had said, as Noah did when he started to preach, the flood (or Kingdom) will come in one hundred and twenty years, they would not have thought it was long to wait. But no person ever had to wait that long, though it has been nearly two thousand years since Jesus came. God knew that would just be long enough to choose the right number of **true** Christians for the Bride of Christ.

It was long enough for most people to get like the people before the flood and think it would never come. That was what Jesus said they would do and Peter tells us in the letter he wrote to the Church that there *‘would come in the last days (of the age) scoffers, walking after their own lusts (that means people who would prefer their own will to God’s will) who would say, ‘Where is the promise of His coming, for since the fathers fell asleep all things continue as they were in the beginning.’* So we need not be surprised that people laugh at us when we say the present trouble will be the last and that the Kingdom of Christ will be set up on the earth and will bring happiness and peace to everyone.”

“But how can we tell that it is really coming now, Mummy?”

“Because the things that are happening now have never happened before. God is breaking down all the nations, as He said He would. There are many things in the Bible that were put there to show us when the right time had come, but only those who really

loved God and studied His Word would understand. Daniel told us it would be like that, for he said, *'None of the wicked shall understand but the wise shall understand'.*"

"Is it because we are better than other people that we can know about the Kingdom, Mummy?"

"No, my darling. It is because we have faith in God and because He has given us His love and favour. Even the faith we have was not our own doing. It was given to us by our Father. God has chosen us and showed us these things. We may be very grateful to Him but we must never feel that we are better than other people for that would be pride and *'God resisteth the proud and giveth His grace to the humble.'* That is a good verse for you, dear. Look, Linnet, see the sun is shining again and the storm is past. You can go out now as long as you keep out of the puddles."

"Oh, Mummy!" Linnet called a few minutes later. "Come and see the lovely rainbow. It is a perfect arch."

"How lovely!" Mother said as she watched the beautiful bow. Do you remember the verse about it?"

"Yes, Mummy. *'And it shall come to pass when I bring a cloud over the Earth that the bow shall be seen in the cloud....and I will look upon it that I may remember the covenant'*" Linnet said. "Mummy, just think, God is looking at that bow too. Is it not wonderful to think of that?"

"It is indeed, my darling, and He will never forget His promise. His bow is also upon the clouds of war and trouble that are over the world, Linnet, and He is watching it and will remember His promise to *'bless all the people of the earth'*", Mrs Grey replied.

"It is like a lovely picture painted on the clouds, is it not, Mummy. Let's watch it for a while." Linnet seated herself on the railing of the verandah and Mrs Grey stood beside her and slipped her arm around the slender figure.

"It is a picture indeed, Linnet, and God Himself was the artist who painted it. How many colours did He use, Linnet?"

"I can see blue and green and yellow and red", the child answered.

"Yes, between the blue and yellow, Linnet, is green. And what do you see between the red and yellow?"

"Why that is orange, Mummy, and see there on the edge of the red is a clear violet colour, almost like the wood violets that grow in the shade."

"That makes six colours. Now look right on the very edge. Can you not see a very dark blue, almost like the cloud itself? That is indigo. The rainbow shows seven colours, Linnet. Seven means perfection, so the rainbow is God's picture of His perfect Plan."

"Our teacher says there are only three true colours, Mummy, red, yellow and blue, and the two neutrals black and white, and all the other colours are made by mixing them."

"We can find a lesson there, Linnet. What does white mean?"

"Purity, or the righteousness of Christ, is it not, Mummy? What is black?"

"The opposite of white, Linnet. It is the colour of sin and death. Now let us think of the pure colours and see if you can tell me what they mean."

"Blue is faithfulness, Mummy. I cannot remember what red is."

"You will if you think for a minute. What is red the colour of?"

"It is the colour of blood, Mummy. Is that it, Jesus' blood?"

"Yes, dear one. Red stands for '*the blood of Jesus which cleanseth us from all sin*'. It is the colour that stands for the ransom. What does yellow stand for?"

"It is the colour of gold, Mummy, and that stands for the things of God," Linnet said.

"That's right, dear. Now we have the meaning of the neutrals and the true colours. White for righteousness, black for sin, and death which follows sin. Red for the Ransom, gold for God's power and blue for His faithfulness. Now we put the gold of God's power and the red of the ransom together and we get the orange of God's Perfect Plan or purpose for men. Then we take the red and the blue of the faithfulness of God and Jesus and we find purple. What does purple stand for, Linnet?"

"It is the colour that kings wear, Mummy, purple for royalty", answered the child.

"Yes, dear, then the result of the ransom and the faithfulness of Jesus will be?" Mother suggested.

"That He will be the King forever, Mummy. Is that not lovely? I never thought of it like that before. If we put yellow and blue together, Mummy, it makes green. What does green mean?"

"The yellow of God's power and the blue of Jesus' faithfulness will bring everlasting life to all the people of the earth, Linnet. Green means eternity."

"Why Mummy, you were right. The whole plan of God is painted in that lovely rainbow. What does the dark, dark blue mean?"

"That is the indigo of trouble and sorrow, darling. When the ransom touches it, it gives the beautiful deep violet of Jesus' majesty. '*He was a man of sorrows and acquainted with grief*' till He gave the ransom for us, and then He became the rightful King. Do you know, dear, that No one has ever seen a perfect rainbow?"

"Why of course not, Mummy. We can only see to the place where it goes down behind the hills. Does it go right round?"

"*There was a rainbow around His throne*" Mother quoted. "When the prophet was given a vision of God he saw Him seated on a throne in the sky with a rainbow around it, a perfect circle, dear. We never see but half of a rainbow; sometimes not that much. But

God can see it all. We never see more than a little of God's purpose at a time. If we could see all His Plan we would understand why things happen to us that seem so strange. Sometimes by and by, we see the other half and then we know why things had to be so." Mrs Grey's voice sounded sad and thoughtful and Linnet spoke softly –

"That was the way with Daddy's illness, Mummy, was it not? When he was so very sick I kept thinking, 'I wonder why God let this happen.' Then after he got better I heard you say that his sickness had changed some who were his enemies to friends, for they were sorry and did such nice things for us. I heard Daddy say he could never again feel as bad about the way they had treated him, for they were so kind when he was ill."

"That is right, dear. Daddy's illness brought many a blessing with it. You know dear, if you ever have an enemy who seems to hate you, it's a good plan to try and get him to do something for you. You cannot hate anyone you have helped. Those men will never hate your Daddy again."

"I cannot see why they ever hated him, Mummy. Daddy is so good and kind always."

"Perhaps that was the reason, dear. We find it hard to love those who show up our failings. That was why the people hated Jesus; because He was good and they were evil. Had they ever done Him a good turn, the hatred would have melted away."

"If I ever find myself hating anyone, Mummy, I will try and remember that and think it may be because they are nicer than me. Then I'll try and do something nice for them and see how it works. See, Mummy, the rainbow is fading."

"Linnet, I just thought of another thing about a rainbow. What makes it?"

"The sun on the clouds, Mummy."

"And what are the clouds, Linnet?"

"Water, Mummy, and water is truth. You would not think that truth could make such a storm, would you?"

"The biggest storms this world has ever seen were caused by truth getting out of control, Linnet", Mother smiled. "It was the truth that all men are equal and all children of one Father that caused the great revolution in France and the one in Russia. Then the sun is a picture of – Now I wonder if you remember?"

"You told me once that when the Bible said the sun should be darkened, it meant that the Bible would not be understood. Is the Bible the Sun, then, Mummy?"

"The New Testament, or the Gospel of the Kingdom, is pictured by the sun and the Old Testament by the moon. The moon is dark till the sun shines on it, dear. So it was impossible to understand the Old Testament till the light of the Gospel of Jesus' coming Kingdom shone on it. Jesus is also pictured by the Sun, for the Bible says '*The Sun of Righteousness shall arise with healing in His beams*'. Now when the sun of the Gospel of Jesus shines on the clouds of trouble, the people of this world will see the rainbow of God's Plan for them. That is the thought I wanted to give you", Mrs Grey said earnestly.



“Now darling, there goes the last of the rainbow and the storm too. Listen to the birds, how they sing.”

“I guess the people will all be singing when the storm is past, Mummy”, Linnet said. “There comes Mary to play. I must tell her about the rainbow.” And away she went, while Mother returned to her work.

#### **Chapter 4: Talking Things Over**

Tho' here on the earth as a pilgrim I roam,  
In spirit I'm oft with my Father at home.  
In the midst of life's trials, in rapture I sing  
*“All glory to God, I'm the child of a king.”*

When dangers afright me and sorrows molest,  
In the joy of His Presence I find sweetest rest.  
In the whirl of life's duties petitions I bring  
To the soul's sweetest refuge – the shade of His wing.

I always find comfort, I know He will hear  
And answer my queries. Love stills all my fear.  
His mercy will shield me, His power will bring  
A great consolation, I'm the child of a king.

What matter the sorrows and trials of life?  
The thought of my Father brings peace in all strife.  
I know when my labours at least are complete  
I shall find joy and rest at my dear Father's feet.

I know He is testing and trying my love  
While preparing a home for His child up above.  
So thru' sorrow and labours, in peace I still sing  
*“All glory to God, I'm the child of a king.”*

*“Stray Petals”*

“Come and talk to me for a little while Mummy, before I go to sleep. There are some things I want to talk over with you.”

“I can spare a few minutes, Linnet. Daddy was so very tired tonight that he has fallen asleep. Sister is washing up the supper things so we will be able to have a quiet little talk. What is it you wish to ask, dear?” Mrs Grey said, sitting down in the little rocker with her knitting.

“Mummy, did you ever see the sky so lovely as it was after the storm passed away this afternoon? Mary and Jennie and I sat on their porch and I told them what you said about the rainbow. They were so interested. Then Mummy, I noticed the world around. Everything looked so clean and washed. The world is so beautiful. Mummy, why does Daddy have to work so hard? He looked so tired and sick tonight it almost frightened me. Couldn't someone else do some of his work?”

Mrs Grey smiled. Linnet had a very active mind for a nine-year-old. Sometimes she wondered if the child was not too old for her years. She seemed to have such a keen grasp of things. It made her wonder what would lie ahead in the years to come for this little one, but she never sought to avoid a question or to give an evasive answer.

“Darling, there are many men who would be glad to help Daddy in his work. It would make things much easier for him too but, as things are at present, those who are in charge of affairs try to get all the work they can from one person. To give him an assistant would mean paying two men instead of one.”

“Couldn’t Daddy get an easier job, Mummy?”

“It is not easy to get work these days, dear. Now do not worry any more about things like that. Daddy is God’s child and He is taking care of him. You know that those who are to be kings and priests in the coming Kingdom must have a clear understanding of what is wrong with this world. If your Daddy gets too tired, our Father will see he gets a rest. We can do our part by making home a pleasant place for him and by keeping things quiet so he can rest here.”

“Yes, Mummy, I know it is all in God’s hand but I hate to see him so tired. It seems so selfish of the people who run things to let Daddy work so hard and Susie Jones’ daddy can’t get work at all.”

“It is selfishness that makes all the trouble in the world, Linnet. We can only remember that, as God’s children, we are to be lights in the world and never let there be any selfishness in our hearts,”

“No one will be selfish in Jesus’ Kingdom, will they Mummy? I was thinking today, after the storm, how the world would look clean and washed then, like it did today. The people did not stay good very long after the flood though, did they, Mummy? How can we tell that they will not be bad again? There will still be people.”

“The reason they did not stay good after that was that Satan was still their king. In the new Kingdom we will have a new King, Linnet. The people will learn to do right then.”

“If God had made Jesus the King then, Mummy, the people would have been good, would they not?”

“They might have been, Linnet, but you see God’s plan was all laid and people had to learn the result of doing wrong. Then it seems that God had allowed Satan a week of God’s days to try what he could do with the world, as a lasting lesson. He could have just taken Satan’s life and the lives of all the wicked angels and their children right then, and have turned the world over to Jesus – who was then the Great Logos - but He had planned that Jesus should see how bad the world could get, and help to make the pictures, then win the love of men by giving His life for us. God could see all the rainbow dear, even then, so He just stopped the angels taking human form and made it so they could only tempt men through their thoughts. That made it hard for people to be good but they could do it if they really wished.”

“Were many people good then, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

"There were some. We do not know how many. There was Shem, who is thought to have been the one who was sometimes called Melchisedec. He was a priest of God and he became a king of Salem – the city that came to be called Jerusalem in King David's time. The first good man we read of after the flood was Abram."

"God used him to make pictures with too, did He not, Mummy? I remember in my '*Ten Camels*' book he was a picture of God."

"You remember that Abram lived in a little city that was called 'Ur'. The city of Ur was found recently by the explorers I told you of. There they found tablets telling of the flood and records that were dated so many years after the flood, and they prove the truth of our Bible and show that the people of Ur were worshippers of the false gods. They found that the people were clever and well educated and that the women wore silver and gold ribbons in their hair, and earrings and bracelets. They wrote poems and had hymn books and kept records just as we do."

"I wish my teacher would read those books, Mummy. Then she would not say such foolish things", Linnet remarked.

"When the Kingdom has come everyone will understand and will see how mistaken they have been, dear. Now God is testing His people by letting them hear those stories to see if they would rather have them than the Truth. It was because the people of Ur believed the falsehoods told them by those who worshipped idols that God called Abram to leave that city and go to a country God would show him. God wished Abram to know the Truth because he hated the sin and foolishness of the people of Ur, and he believed in God."

"Was Abram a picture at that time, Mummy?"

"If he was, it would be a picture of those who are loyal to God and leave the world and its false teachings and errors to follow the guidance of the spirit of God and of the blessing that comes to them", Mrs Grey replied. "It was not till later that he was used to make a picture of God."

"Abram left Ur in obedience to God's command and wandered through the country together with his father and brothers. His brother Haran died before they left Ur, and when they came to a place they liked and settled down there, they named the little town Haran – perhaps after the boy who had died. They stayed there till Abram's father, Terah, died. Then Abram took his wife, Sarai – who was also his sister – and their nephew Lot and his wife and family, and started again to find the land God had told them of. The rest of Terah's children remained in Haran. Abram was as old as your grandfather when they left Haran."

"How old is that, Mummy?"

"Seventy-five, dear. But people lived much longer then than they do now."

"Where did they go to then, Mummy?"

"They went to Canaan, where Jesus lived many years later. God appeared to Abram in a vision and told him that He would give all the land of Canaan to him and his children."

“Mummy, you said the people of Ur worshipped idols. That was not very long after the flood, was it? What started them worshipping idols instead of God?”

“That is an interesting subject, Linnet. You see, Noah had three sons – two of them were good but the third one, Ham, was not so good. They had all grown up among the people who were destroyed for their wicked works. They had seen and known the great and powerful angels who had taken human form and lived among them, and they had known their giant sons.

“Noah had seen so much of the wickedness that he was glad the giants were dead, but the people did not yet know that the wicked angels would never be able to come down again and live among them. Ham must have rather fancied the power and sin, for he did not try to serve God. Ham had a grandson who was more wicked than he was and this boy, who was called Nimrod, is said by old fables and stories to have married his own mother, who was a very proud and ambitious woman. Nimrod is said to have been very clever in hunting and to have trained the wild leopards to hunt for him. As the people were greatly in need of furs and meat after the flood and God had given them permission to kill and eat the animals and to use their skins for clothes, his power over animals made Nimrod very rich and famous.

“The animals, you know, went wild after the flood and were more than half crazy from their terrible experience. They had to fight and kill each other to keep from starving for there was so little food for them. Everything had been destroyed by the flood. The people hunted them too, and that made them hate mankind and they tried to kill men, just as God said that they would. So when a man came along who succeeded in taming the leopards and using them like dogs, people thought he must be more than just a man. Nimrod was pleased and, instead of telling them he was no different to themselves, he let them make a sort of a god of him.”

“Does the Bible tell us much about him, Mummy?”

“Very little, Linnet. It simply says Nimrod began to be a mighty one (a god) in the earth and was spoken of as *‘The mighty hunter before (that means worshipped ahead of) God.’* The discoveries of Babylon and other ancient cities, however, always picture Nimrod with tame leopards, and the old stories tell of his power over the animals. It is claimed that all the false teachings in the world today have come down from the worship of this wicked man. It is told of him that he claimed to be a god and grew so rich and powerful that the people began to think he was one of the angels who had come back to earth.

“Satan was glad to find someone he could use. There is an old story that tells how Shem and Japheth, seeing the danger to all men of the wickedness starting again, called a council of the elders together to see what could be done. It was decided to kill Nimrod in order to stop the people putting him in God’s place. They felt sure that if he was dead no one would serve him. So Nimrod was executed and his body was cut in pieces and parts of it sent to every city where the people had made a god of him, to warn them that those who followed his wicked ways would also be killed. I told you that Nimrod had married his mother, and in this way he became his own father by marriage and his own son, too. They joked about him being three people and yet just one.

"Nimrod's mother heard of what had happened to her son and sent messengers to gather and bury the pieces of his body and to build a shrine over each piece. Then Satan suggested a clever scheme to her. She knew about the '*Seed of the Woman*' God had promised to destroy Satan, and she claimed that her son, Nimrod, was this promised 'Seed'."

"Oh, but he wasn't, Mummy!" Linnet cried. "Jesus was the Seed."

"Yes, dear; we know that. But the people away back there thought Nimrod was greater than just a man, and they were quite ready to believe the false claim. His mother said the angels had taken Nimrod back to heaven and he had become a great god; that he had killed Satan and was now ruling in the spirit world, and would send them messages through her. Thus the worship of Nimrod grew. Images of Nimrod were made, and soon images of his mother with the baby Nimrod in her arms were set up also, and these were almost exactly like the images the Catholics have of Mary and the baby Jesus. The Bible tells us that the beginning of Nimrod's kingdom was Babel. It seems that he suggested the building of that tower as a refuge from another flood."

"But Mummy, God promised there would not be another flood!" Linnet protested.

"Yes, darling, but the people preferred to believe Nimrod and Satan who was using him. God saw that the building of that tower was drawing the people farther away from faith in Him and causing much suffering among the people, so He stopped it."

"Didn't anyone believe God, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. God had His faithful children then, too. Shem was faithful, and he was a king and priest of God. It was chiefly the children of Ham who worked on the tower under Nimrod's direction. They left the work of planting gardens and making homes to build the city of Babylon and the tower of Babel. Nimrod, so the Bible says, also built the city of Nineveh. That city, too, has been found and in it much that has showed us how the people lived in those days.

"Worship of Nimrod had spread and when the language of the people was changed...."

"That was the way God stopped the building, was it not, Mummy?"

"Sorry, dear, your question broke the thread of our story. Yes, God, or possibly the Great Logos by God's orders, came down and changed the speech of the people so that some talked one language and some another. Then those who spoke German and French went north and made homes for themselves. Those who spoke Russian and Turkish went eastward, and so on. The work on the tower was stopped for want to workmen.

Wherever they went they took the false doctrines of Nimrod and his mother with them. It was the beginning of the worship of the three gods in one that spread all over the land. The names of the gods changed according to the way the people spoke. In one land they were called Isis and Osiris and Ra. That was in Egypt. In another there was Baal and Astaroth and so on."

"Why did you say the 'three in one gods', Mummy?"

“Because that was what they called it, dear. They said Nimrod was himself and his own father and his own son by marriage, that made him three yet they were just one, and the mother was called the ‘Queen of Heaven’ and the ‘Mother of God’.

“It was this worship that made Abraham, who believed God, leave Ur. Now darling, I hear your Daddy moving about. I must go and see how he is feeling, and we will talk about those early days and about God’s pictures another time. Your eyes are getting heavy, anyway, and it’s time you were asleep.”

“I would like to have a Bible verse to think about, Mummy”, Linnet said.

“Very well, dear. Here is one that goes well with our talk. It shows that God’s Plan will work out right. *‘He shall not fail nor be discouraged till He has set judgment in the earth.’* That verse is in Isaiah 42, verse 4”, Mrs Grey replied as she kissed her little girl goodnight.

## Chapter 5: Abraham and Sarah

The picture God was painting grew apace.  
Not in the lifeless hues of pigment laid  
On stationary canvas; but by His wondrous grace  
Wrought out in living shades that cannot fade,  
By human actors. By His spirit led from day to day  
Each major scene in their eventful life  
Some portion of His purpose did portray.  
The Apostle Paul speaks of their joy and strife –  
“These things an allegory were” – Abram played the part  
Of God – the Great Creator – while his wives  
God’s covenants with men would represent.

Sarah – the New Jerusalem who bears the seed –  
While Hagar is a picture of the Law  
And those who, from its thrall, are not yet freed  
Were pictured by her young son, Ishmael.  
As Sarah must lone years await the heir,  
So God’s great covenant for many years  
Was barren, till Christ came who was to bear  
The sentence for mankind; to dry our tears  
And raise us up to life and hope again.  
He was the promised Seed and He would slay  
The serpent; wipe away all grief and pain  
And rule the world in the Millennial day.

“Mummy, I don’t know what to do with myself”, Linnet said the next afternoon. “It is Saturday and I can’t go out to play in this rain. Jennie and Mary have gone to a show, so they cannot come to play. I wish summer could last always.”

Mrs Grey was mixing piecrust and she laughed at the doleful face of her little daughter. “Well, you do look downhearted. How would you like to peel these apples for me while I make my pies?”

"I will if you will tell me a story while we work, Mummy!"

"Hm, bribery and corruption, and I'm just chump enough to let you get away with it", Mrs Grey grumbled, but her eyes were laughing and Linnet's face brightened. "What kind of a story do you want this time? Seems to me I have been telling stories ever since I was knee high to a grasshopper. I used to bribe my little brother to wipe the dishes for me by telling him stories, so I guess I have no kick coming if you bribe me the same way."

"Was that Uncle Henry, Mummy?"

"No, dear. When Henry was old enough to tell stories to I was telling them to your oldest sister, May", Mrs Grey answered. "It was your Uncle Ross, who fell asleep just before the last war. He always loved my stories too, but I had not had as much experience then as I have now." A shade of sorrow darkened her eyes for a moment but was quickly chased away with a smile. Mrs Grey did not believe in letting past sorrows shadow the present. "Well, what kind of a story will you have this time? Here is a knife, and you may as well get busy on those apples."

"You were telling me about Abraham, Mummy. Why is it that you sometimes say Abraham and sometimes Abram?"

"That is because God changed his name, Linnet. Abram was the name his father gave him when he was little, but when God called him to leave his father's house and all his relatives in Haran and start out to find a new home and he obeyed, he came under God's special care. God tried and tested him and taught him many lessons of faith and because Abram tried in every way to please Him, when he was ninety-nine years old God changed his name to Abraham, which means 'Father of nations'. Before that time he and his nephew, Lot, had been very successful and had gained great flocks and herds. The flocks had become so big that it took an army of servants to take care of them, and the servants got to quarrelling over which should get the best pastures, so at last Abram and Lot separated. They decided to divide the land of Canaan between them as a pasture, and Lot chose the valleys around the River Jordan where there were great cities, while Abram chose to live in the hills. Abram knew that idol worship was spreading and felt he would rather be close to God and away from the evil."

"Did they buy the land, Mummy? It must have taken a lot of money."

"No, Linnet, they did not buy it. People did not live like we do in those days. Abram knew that all the land in the world belonged to God, and God had promised to give him all the land of Canaan for his own. There were a lot of people living in the land of Canaan but these all lived in cities that had big walls around them and they kept wandering bands of sheep and cattle in the country around the cities. They were mostly the children of Canaan – one of the sons of Ham. It is thought that these people were mostly very dark skinned, perhaps almost black. Nimrod, who was his grandson, is generally pictured as being a black man, and negroes always claim to be children of Ham. The land outside of the cities was free country and any person could live where he wished, so people travelled from place to place and when they found a place they liked they would build their homes all together, and soon it would grow to be a town, and they would build a wall around it and call it a city. We would call them villages today, for they were mostly quite small and usually just the descendants of one family lived there. Sometimes other people would come to the city and like it, and the people would let them buy land and

build there too. The city or country came to be called after the family that lived there. At first Lot and his family lived in the country around Jordan, but soon they began to like the life of the cities and Lot bought a home in the city of Sodom and moved there, while he hired servants to look after his sheep and cattle. Lot had a big family but Abraham had no children, only servants who worked for him.

“Often the king of one city – who was usually the oldest member of the family that lived there – would quarrel with a king of another city and then he would take his soldiers and go to the other city and fight. The one who was victorious would then be king of two cities, and he would make the people of the conquered city pay him money to let them live there. In this way there soon came to be some very strong kings who owned or ruled over several cities. Then at times one king would have a quarrel with a king who had more soldiers and he would go to visit friendly kings and get them to help him fight his enemy. This happened while Lot lived in Sodom. The king of that city quarrelled with the king who ruled over several cities nearby, and this king gathered his friends and they came with a big army and attacked the cities in the plain around the Dead Sea. They won the battle and they took all the people of those cities prisoners and took all their possessions and carried them off to be slaves. Lot and his family were captured and Abram heard about it and took all his servants and called his friends to help, and they went after them and fought the kings and won a victory, and they took back all the prisoners and goods that had been taken from the cities of the plain and set all the prisoners free.”

“It is then that we first hear of the King of Salem, which is now the city of Jerusalem. This king was called Melchisedec, and he was a true servant of God and a priest as well as a king. He is thought to have been Abram’s great-great-grandfather Shem, for he was the one who was then the head of Abram’s family, and he lived to be six hundred years old and so would be living at that time. He came to meet Abram and praised him highly for his action in going to the rescue of the people of the plains. He gave him God’s blessing, and Abram gave him one tenth of all the riches he had taken from the kings he had defeated. Melchisedec praised God for the success of Abram. If he had not been the reigning head of Abram’s family, he would hardly have divided the spoil with him. Some people think that it was this same man, Shem or Melchisedec, who was the priest or representative of God who built the great pyramid in Egypt because it was built about that time and the stories of Egypt tell of shepherd kings who came out of the East to Egypt and put a stop to the idol worship there, and set the people of Egypt to work for them. The Great Pyramid must have been built under God’s direction for it contains information that no one but God could have had.”

“I would like to see that Pyramid, Mummy. I have seen pictures of it and it must be wonderful”, Linnet said, carefully peeling an apple as she spoke.

Mother smiled and fluted the edge of a pie as she answered. “It would be well worth seeing, but we can only have the pictures that were taken by those who visited it to go by. It is not nearly as grand now though, for many years ago the Arabs stripped off all the wonderful marble casing stones and carried them off to build palaces for themselves.”

“Did Lot go back to Sodom, Mummy?”



"Yes, dear, but Abram went back to the hills where God's great angel met him and said, *'Do not be afraid Abram for I will always be your shield and your reward.'* Abram said *'But Lord, what can you give me seeing I have no children? How can your promise that I will be the father of a great nation be fulfilled when my servant will inherit all my possessions when I die?'*

"Then the angel said, *'This servant, Eliezer, shall not be your heir. You will yet have a son of your own. And now look up into the sky and see how many stars there are. If you can number the stars, then you will be able to count those who will be your descendants.'*

"Although Abram had no children, he believed God and this pleased God for it showed what great faith Abram had. The angel said *'I am the God who called you to leave the city of Ur and who promised that all this land of Canaan should yet belong to your family and that your seed should bless all the families of the earth.'*

"Abram knew that this meant that the 'Seed of the Woman' should be one of his family so he said *'Would you give me a sign that this will really happen and that this is not just a dream?'*

"Then the angel said *'Go and get a young cow, three years old, and a goat and ram of the same age, and a dove and a young pigeon and kill them and cut the animals in two and lay them here.'* Abram did as the angel said and placed the sacrifice as the angel told him to, then stayed near to watch them and see what sign God would give him. The eagles and hawks came to try and steal the meat, but Abram drove them away. When evening came he was weary and fell asleep, and he dreamed it was so very dark and he was afraid of the darkness, then he heard a voice speak and it said, *'Abram, you may know for sure that your children will be wanderers in a strange land and will be ill-treated by the people who live there. They will be there four hundred years and will become very great, and I will then punish the nation that has ill-treated them and I will bring them back to this land, a great people and very rich. You will fall asleep before that, but when the wickedness of the people in this land has become very great, I will bring your children here and give them the country.'* Then Abram saw a fire passing between the pieces of the sacrifice he had made. And God spoke again and told him that He would surely give all the land of Canaan to Abram's children. Abram believed the promise and went back to his home.

"He told Sarai, his wife, all about it and she thought about it all for some time. At first she was very happy, for she had always longed to have a little baby, but the time went on; one year, and another passed and the promised baby did not come. Sarai began to think that God must intend her to do something about it. She thought perhaps God was not pleased with **her**, and wished Abram to have another wife. People often had more than one wife in those days. At last she went to Abram and said, *'Abram, it seems that I cannot have any little ones. God must be displeased with me, but His promises never fail. Hagar, my maid, is a strong, young girl, why not take her to be your wife too? Perhaps then God will send you the son He has promised.'* This was very nice of Sarai, for no woman likes to have another woman share her home, but to Sarai it seemed much more important that God's will should be done than that she should be happy. God was pleased with her unselfishness and it fitted in with His plan for them. Abram had begun to think there must be something he should do, so he took Sarai's suggestion and married Hagar."

“Was Hagar really a nice person, Mummy?”

“She was a good servant, but now that she was Abram’s wife she changed. Always before she did everything she could for Sarai but now she grew proud and would not do her work, and she was very mean to her mistress. She got so nasty that Sarai went to Abram about it. Abram loved Sarai but he did not love the maid, and he said ‘She is still your servant, Sarai. If she gets nasty or disobedient you may punish her as you think best.’”

“Did Sarai punish her, Mummy?” Linnet asked. She had finished the apples and was standing by the table watching Mrs Grey, who was clearing up after her baking.

“Yes, Linnet. The next time the maid refused to do as she was told Sarai got very cross with her. Hagar saw she had gone too far and was frightened, so she ran away. She went away out into the wilderness, or bush, near the camp and would not come back. Of course, she knew she should not have treated Sarai like that.

“Out in the bush she found a stream and sat down there. She had made up her mind never to go back to the camp; when she looked up she saw a stranger there. The stranger said ‘What are you doing here, Hagar?’

“She replied ‘I have run away from my mistress because she was angry with me.’

“‘You must return to your mistress, Hagar. You know that you were in the wrong, for you are still her maid even if she has been kind enough to give you to Abram for a wife. You should not have tried to lord it over her. If you return and try to be a faithful servant to her I, the Lord, will bless you and I will give you a son, and you must call him Ishmael. He will grow up to be a wild man and very quarrelsome, and he will dwell in the midst of his brethren. I will also give you many children and will make of you a great nation.’ Then the angel disappeared and Hagar went back to the camp. She was really glad to get home again for she had been afraid away out in the wilderness alone. She told Sarai she was sorry for the way she had been acting and Sarai, who was a kind-hearted woman and really good, forgave her.

“Did God give Hagar the son He promised, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“Indeed He did, dear. Ishmael was born and was probably a very sweet baby, but he was the pride of his old father and came to be very spoiled. Sarai was very good to the little fellow and he soon grew to be quite a big boy. He was mean and quarrelsome though as he grew older just as the angel said he would be. The servants all looked up to him as a great prince and he loved to make them do things for him. He was not a pleasant boy.”

“Something like Jimmie Davis, I guess, Mummy. He is always fighting and making trouble and he throws stones and torments the girls, and no one likes him.”

“Yes, something like that. Well, things went on all right till Ishmael was about thirteen. Abram looked upon the boy as his heir and planned to leave all his wealth to him, and Ishmael knew this and was always taking advantage of it. Then, when Abram was nearly one hundred years old, God sent His angel to him again. The angel said, *‘I am the*

*mighty God. Try to do my will and to be perfect and I will make a covenant with you and will give you many children, and you will be the father of a great race.'*

*"Abram fell down on his knees before the angel and hid his face. The angel said, 'My covenant shall be with you and you shall become the father of many nations. You will not be called Abram any longer, but Abraham, and I will bless you very greatly and there shall be many kings among your children. I will bless your children also and will give to them all the land of Canaan for a possession forever. As a token of this covenant, every boy and every man among you must be marked, From now on every child that is born to your family must be marked with this mark as soon as he is eight days old. Every slave you buy must also be marked and any man child that is not marked when eight days old I will not count as one of your children nor will I bless him, for he will have broken my covenant. Sarai your wife will also have a son, for I will bless her and give her a child in her old age, and she shall be called Sarah, for she will be the mother of a great nation.'*

"Abraham laughed in his heart, for he thought 'Can a man who is a hundred years old have a son, and shall Sarah have a child in her old age?' Then he said to the angel, 'I wish that you would bless Ishmael. He is my son and heir.'

"But the angel said, '*Sarah shall indeed have a son, and my promise will go to him for he, and not Ishmael, shall be your heir, and it is with him that I will make my covenant. Ishmael shall also have a blessing and he will have twelve sons, but at this time next year Sarah shall have the son I have promised.*' Then the angel went away, and Abraham went out and marked every boy and man in his family and among his servants with the mark that God had given him, which has always set the Children of Israel apart from all other races."

"Was that part of the story of Abraham one of God's pictures, Mummy?"

Mother took her last pie out of the oven and set it on the shelf to cool as she answered, "Yes, Linnet, it was. It was the first part of a great picture. Abraham pictured God and Sarah, his wife, pictured the great covenant or promise that God made to bless all the people of the earth through the promised Seed. Just as God's promise seemed as if it would never been fulfilled, so the years have passed and it seemed as if the Kingdom would never come. Then God made another covenant with the Children of Israel, which we will learn about later on. This covenant was pictured by the marriage of Hagar to Abram before the promised seed came. The result of that covenant was a quarrelsome people who lived among the other nations, hating them and misunderstood and hated by them."

"Do you mean the Jews, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. Ishmael was a picture of the Jewish nation. He had twelve sons, who pictured the twelve tribes of Israel, and just as the Ishmaelites were a race of wanderers on the earth, with no settled home, living like wild men in the desert and preying upon the other nations, so the Jews have been driven out of their own land and have become wanderers; a people apart from all others, with no flag and no country. God did not forget His promise, however, that He would bless all the nations of the earth. It is only that the time for that promise to be fulfilled had not come. God blessed Abraham and gave him the promised son, and in time He will also bless the Jewish nation and through

them all the other nations of the earth. Even the descendants of Ishmael will share the blessing.”

“Who are Ishmael’s descendants, Mummy?” Linnet inquired.

“They are the Arabs, dear. Now there is the phone ringing and you may answer it for it is likely one of your little friends home from the show.”

Linnet ran to the phone and in a minute she called “You were right, Mummy. It is Jennie. Can I go over to her house to play?”

“Yes, darling, but put on a warm coat for it’s damp and cold out.”

Soon Linnet was back, all wrapped up, for a good-bye kiss. “It was nice of you to tell me a story and help the afternoon to pass so quickly” she said. Will you tell me more tonight, Mummy?”

“If I can, dear. It will depend on what Daddy wishes to do.”

So Linnet ran off to play with her little friends.

## **Chapter 6: A Great Disaster**

For Sodom and Gomorrah are the world,  
Whose evil deeds have been observed by God.  
Man’s selfishness and greed to death have hurled  
So many millions, as beneath the rod  
They made their brethren slave in direst need;  
Denied them food and shelter and their share  
In God’s rich blessings and they would not heed  
Their stricken cries, but sought to make them bear  
Still heavier burdens.

Against this modern Sodom God will rise  
And call His own to safety and to peace,  
On civilization from the angry skies  
Shall rain a fire that yet shall cause to cease  
The evil practices of selfish men.

Oh would men heed the warnings God has sent  
And turn to righteousness and love again,  
He – in His mercy – might e’en now relent.  
Alas, the picture shows, on pleasure bent  
And in their greed for gold they will not hear  
Or heed, tho’ men and angels to them call.  
They laugh and scoff and mock while very near  
Destruction hovers o’er their evil heads –  
Yes, it will fall in fury on our race,  
’Tis written and the time draws on apace  
When God will plead no more. Then will come  
His dreadful judgment on the sons of men.

*From Types and Shadows*

"You never realise what a crazy world this is that we live in till you get a view of it from the mind of a child." Young Mrs Thornton spoke earnestly and her mother, Mrs Grey, answered, "'*From the mouths of babes and sucklings thou hast perfected praise.*' Those were true words of the Master's, May. But just what is the cause of that remark?" She had gone to visit her married daughter and taken Linnet with her to play with the two little boys that were at once the despair and the joy of their young mother. While the children amused themselves, Mother and daughter were talking of the trend of world events.

"Lisle came home from school the other day and his face was so troubled. You know what a nervous little fellow he is. He said to me, 'Mamma, do you know what our teacher said today? She said there's going to be another war and all our daddies will have to go away and fight. That is not true, is it?' Well, I did not know what to say. You know how it is these days with the radio bringing news of the troops gathered in Europe and the danger of war. I could not say no, yet I wished to quiet his fears. So I said 'I hope not, Lisle. Things do look as if there might be another war but that does not necessarily mean Daddy would have to go.' He said 'But Mamma, teacher said that when there is a war the soldiers go out and fight and kill each other. It's wicked to kill people, Mamma. You told me that God said people must not kill other people. The policemen won't let them, will they Mamma? Don't policemen always put bad men in jail?' Mother, how can you explain this mad world to the pure mind of a child?"

"It is pretty hard, May. What did you tell him? Mrs Grey asked, interested in knowing how her daughter had met this problem of every mother in this strange world.

"Well, I didn't know what to say, so I said 'Maybe the policemen cannot stop them, Lisle. They might have to go too.' He said 'But Daddy is a good man, Mamma. He would not kill another little boy's daddy would he?' I said "Not if he could help it, Lisle.' Then his eyes grew so deep and serious and he said, 'Daddy won't go, Mamma, I will ask **God** not to let him, and if the policemen won't stop him **God** will.'" Mrs Thornton's voice was husky and her eyes filled with tears as she added, "I said 'While you keep that wonderful faith, Lisle, God will never fail you no matter what men may do. Keep on trusting Him.' And Mother, every time he says his prayers now he adds, 'Please don't let my Daddy go to war and kill other little boys' daddies.' It makes me want to cry, and then it makes me so furious I'd like to tear the world apart and set it right for our little ones."

Mrs Grey's voice was husky too as she said softly, "Don't let it take that effect on you, May. It is hard to view events with a clear mind these days, but keep a close hold on God and remember that these things must be before the Kingdom can be established. We know that all the nations will be broken in pieces before the desire of the nations can come. Where this thing will end we cannot tell. It looks to me as if the prophecy '*They shall blow the trumpet, even to make everything ready, but no man goeth forth to battle*', may have been fulfilled in the conference in Munich. But if that is so we are getting close to the last, great trouble. We must try and see things from God's standpoint. The nations have sinned and are condemned to destruction, and the righteous blood that has been spilled in all the world since Jesus came to earth must be atoned for. Do not worry too much over the children's viewpoint. Try and teach them faith. Children adjust themselves quickly."

“Mother, I do not mind these things for myself, but when I think of the children everywhere, my heart goes out to them. There have been thousands killed in Spain and China and there will be more before this is over. It makes my heart sick.”

“May, try and remember that death is not the horror we used to think it. The little ones who die will sleep and miss much pain and terror, and wake again when all is set right. Their minds are agile, and they quickly forget, and when they wake in the joy of His Kingdom they will look back on these scenes of terror as a bad dream that will quickly fade away.”

“Yes, that is true, Mother. It’s hard to keep that in mind though.”

Just then the door burst open with a joyous shout and Linnet came flying into the room with the two boys at her heels. There was no more chance for quiet talk, and soon Mrs Grey took her little girl and returned to her home. The talk of the afternoon remained in her mind and she determined to try and prepare her own child for the terrifying events that might soon be loosed upon the world. She must seek to establish a faith that would not fail no matter what might come, and truly peace seemed to be about to leave the world. How could she give her child and these little grandsons also a viewpoint that would be of help to them, not only during the trying years that might so soon be upon them but also in the days of reconstruction to follow? That was the question uppermost in her heart that afternoon.

She was very quiet as she sat in the bus with her little daughter. How many millions of mothers everywhere in the world were watching with breathless horror the preparation for war! What could a mother do? Nothing, she realised, except give her child and such other children as she could reach the greatest help and comfort. “If I can only reach some of them and give them the comfort that only faith and prayer can bring, I shall not have lived in vain”, she thought. “This trouble must come. Nothing can stop the chariot wheels of God, but if I can show some of His little ones that His hand can reach out from that chariot and lift them to safety, if they have faith and know how to reach the Father’s kindly heart through trusting in Him, who knows what the result may be.”

“What makes you so quiet, Mummy? Has something worried you?” Linnet asked, looking up into her eyes. The bus was nearly empty for they were nearing the end of the line.

“I was just thinking, dear”, Mrs Grey answered. See, here is where we get out, Linnet.” They stepped lightly to the pavement and proceeded to walk the short distance to their home. On the way Linnet saw some of her little friends. “Can I stop and play till five, Mummy?” she asked.

“Yes, dear. Come home when the whistle blows”, Mrs Grey answered, glad of a little time for thought. When she reached home she found the house empty, and setting the kettle on to boil for supper she took off her hat and coat and then closed her bedroom door and dropped on her knees. “Oh my Father”, she prayed earnestly, “If it be Thy will, let me be of some help to the little ones in this troubled world. Give me wisdom and show me how to reach them and teach them to trust in a world where faith is so sadly lacking. Let me train my own little one for Thy service that she may help others too. Show me how to build up in her a faith that will not only hold her steadfast and true, but enable her to help others in the days to come.”

She rose from her knees, calm and smiling with the assurance of a perfect trust in the goodness of the Great Father.

Soon the family had all returned from the duties and interests of the day and gathered around the supper table. The older boys and girls kept up a running fire of witticisms in which sometimes their father or mother joined, with a wit unsuspected by those who knew them only in more serious moments. The meals in the Grey home were usually merry ones for they did not believe in a long-faced form of Christianity, and the fun was always clean.

When supper was over and they had gathered in Mr Grey's den for an hour's Bible study, Linnet called down from her room, "Do I get a story tonight, Mummy?"

"I will come as soon as you are ready for bed, dear", Mrs Grey answered. A few moments later found her seated by the bedside, knitting in hand. Sometimes these evenings taxed her strength and patience, but she felt well rewarded by her little daughter's deep and increasing interest in things Divine. Now she said thoughtfully, "I think that we have come to the story of one of the greatest disasters of ancient history, Linnet."

"I thought you would tell me about how Abraham and Sarah got their little son, Mummy", Linnet said.

"This story comes first, dear. You know Abraham and Sarah did not live in a nice house like we do. They lived in tents. These tents were not like any we have in our country. They were made of the skins of animals, sewn together. On the outside they looked dark and ugly for the skins soon became discoloured by the sun and wind, and the tents were often almost black. They had side walls like a house, and often a door that could be held up on stakes to let the fresh air in. These doors were like a flap and made a sort of verandah. Inside the tents were often very comfortable for there were lovely, bright coloured rugs spread over the ground and piles of furs and rugs for couches. The people lived much out of doors. They made rough tables and chairs under the trees where they could eat, and had separate shelters for cooking. Life was a very simple thing in those days. Sarah had a tent of her own and the servants all had tents. Most of the servants were married and had families, and even these helped in the work of caring for the stock. They did not even plant gardens, but travelled wherever they could get lots of grass and water for their stock. They traded animals and hides for whatever they needed, and often sold the lovely rugs or blankets they wove from the wool of their own sheep. When the grass was all used in one place they just moved to another. Sometimes they would have to travel many miles to find pasture, but they were quite happy. One day when Abraham and his family were camped near a place called Mamre, Abraham was sitting in the shade of the door of his tent resting, for they never worked in the heat of the day, when he looked up and saw three strange men coming towards the camp. They were always glad to have visitors for they had no books or papers and only got news from the travellers, some of whom were great story tellers."

"Like you, Mummy?" Linnet teased.

"Not a bit, dear. Those eastern story tellers were an entertainment all by themselves. Often the whole camp would gather in the evening to hear one of their wonderful tales, which were often made up as they went along. Abraham was glad to see strangers

coming and he called Sarah to hurry and get a good meal ready for their visitors, then he ran to meet them and welcome them to his tents.

“He bowed to them in the eastern way and brought water to wash their feet and cool them off, and made them comfortable in the shade of the trees, begging them to stay and rest awhile. When they were settled he ran to the tents of the servants and gave orders that they kill a young calf and cook it and, while the meal was being prepared by the servants, Abraham returned to ask for news of the outside world from the strangers.

“Sarah did not join them for women always kept out of sight in those days, but from the tent she could hear all that they said. She was surprised to hear one of the strangers say *‘Where is Sarah, your wife, Abraham?’*

“‘She is in the tent’, Abraham replied, but did not call her.

“One of the strangers said *‘I will come again to you in a few months’ time, and your wife Sarah shall have a son.’*

“Now Sarah was about ninety years old and she thought that old promise had been fulfilled when Ishmael was born. She thought of herself, an old woman, having a baby and she laughed out loud.”

“I don’t see what there was to laugh at”, Linnet said.

“Well, suppose I had promised you a watch every birthday for the last ten years and had never given it to you, you would feel like laughing if I came to you again and said ‘You will get that watch this year.’ You would just say ‘Oh yes? I’ve heard that before. I will believe it when I see it.’

“That was just how Sarah felt. She did not think they could hear her, but the angel – for it was an angel – said *‘Why did Sarah laugh? Truly I will return at the time God has appointed and Sarah shall have the son you have waited for so long. There is nothing too hard for God.’*

“Now Sarah began to suspect that these men were angels such as she had heard Abraham tell about and she wished to see them so she ventured out, and said ‘I was not laughing at that!’ *But you did laugh*’ said the angel. He was not angry. Sarah really believed now that God was going to keep His promise at last, and she was glad.

“After the men had eaten the meal prepared for the and had rested awhile, they rose and said they were going to Sodom. Abraham walked a while with them and as they walked one of the angels, who was the Logos, said *‘Why should I hide from Abraham the thing I have been sent to do, seeing he is the chosen of God to become the head of a great nation, and that through him all the families of the earth shall be blessed?’* I know him and that he will bring his children up to be true servants of God and to do His will, so that God may keep all that He has promised to him. Abraham, the wickedness of the cities of Sodom and Gomorrah has been very great, and so their sins have been brought to the attention of God. He has sent me to see whether all the reports are true and, if so, to destroy the cities.’



“Abraham thought of his nephew Lot and said, ‘Will you destroy the good along with the wicked? Suppose there are fifty good men in the city, what will you do?’

“*If I find fifty good men in Sodom I will not destroy the city*”, the angel answered. They walked alone for awhile and Abraham spoke again. ‘I know the cities are pretty bad, Lord, but suppose there are just forty good men, would you destroy the city because there were not quite fifty?’

“*If there are forty good men I will spare the city*’, the Logos assured him.

“Abraham thought awhile and then cut his figure to thirty, then to twenty and at last he said, ‘What will you do if there are just ten good people there?’

“*I will spare the city for the sake of the ten good men*’, the Logos answered, and Abraham was content for he felt sure that all Lot’s family would be good and there were more than ten of them. He went home satisfied.”

“Were there not even ten good people in all the city, Mummy?”

“Not even ten, Linnet. The angels reached Sodom in the evening. The Logos evidently preferred to remain invisible and look into the conditions in the city. Lot was sitting in the gate of the city. He must have often regretted that he had not stayed out in the hills instead of bringing his children into the wicked city, for he knew that they had been carried away by the pleasure and sin around them. When he saw the two strangers coming he was troubled, for he knew that no stranger was safe in the city after dark. He rose and went to meet the two angels and said, ‘Please come to my house and stay for the night with me. Then, when morning comes, you may rise early and go on your way.’

“The strangers said ‘Oh no, we could not trouble you. We have heard of the fun and pleasure of Sodom and wish to stay and watch the people.’

“Lot begged them to come to his house. He said, ‘This city is not safe for strangers. The people are wicked and cruel. Please come to my house and have dinner with me.’

“At last they agreed and went with Lot. Before they had eaten dinner and gone to rest they could hear the crowd gathering in the street. It had become known that there were strangers in Lot’s home. They hated Lot anyway because he was a good man, and now they felt that he was interfering with their fun. They crowded around the house and began to shout for him to give the strangers to them. Lot knew that they would kill the man if he let them go, and he went out and begged the people to go away. When the people got so angry that they would have killed Lot and broken the door down to get the strangers and kill them, the two angels pulled Lot in and used their great power to blind the men before they locked the door. That frightened the people in the streets but they still tried to find Lot’s house even though they could not see. They roamed the streets all night.”

“Why did they want to kill the angels, Mummy?”

“Just because they were so bad and cruel, dear. They thought it fun to torture and kill people. It is said of them that they even burned their babies as sacrifices to their evil gods. The angels said to Lot, ‘Have you any other children or friends in this city who do

not agree with the evil deeds of the people? If you have, slip out and find them and bring them here. The people cannot hurt you for they are blind. God has heard of the wickedness of this city and has sent us to destroy it. Be quick, for the minute the sun comes over the hilltop fire will come from God and burn up all the evil cities of the plains.'

"Lot hurried and ran to the homes of his married children and told them what was to happen, but they laughed at him and called him a fool. They had become as bad as the other people and they cared nothing for God or His Word.

"At last Lot gave up when it was nearly morning and went to his home. The angels were waiting for him and with them were his wife and the two youngest girls. The angels said, 'Hurry up, there is not a minute to lose', and when Lot would have waited to try and save something from his home one angel caught his hand and his wife's hand, while another caught hold of the two girls and hurried them out of the city and said, 'Run for your life and do not even stop to look back. Get up into the mountains or you will be killed with the wicked people of the cities.'

"But Lot said, 'I am an old man. I cannot run so far. See, over there is a little city with only a few people in it. Let us go there and please spare it, there are so few people in it. I could get that far but I cannot reach the hills.'

"The angel said, 'Very well; for your sake I will spare the city of Zoar and the few people who live there. Hurry.' So Lot caught his two daughters by the hands and ran for the city of Zoar."

"Did they all get there safe, Mummy?" Linnet asked eagerly.

"Lot and his daughters did, Linnet. But his wife ran a little way and then she began to think how silly it was to run like that. The sun was coming up and it was a lovely morning. There was nothing to fear. She stopped and turned to watch the city. She thought of all the good times they had had and of their lovely home and she decided she was not going to be so easily scared by anything any man could say. The city had been evil for years and God had never punished the people. It was so silly running away like that. Then, just as the sun came over the top of the mountain, Lot reached Zoar and turned to see where his wife was. He saw her standing there watching the cities. There was no time to call her for what happened then was too quick for any help to reach the foolish woman. It seemed as if fire just poured down out of the sky all over the cities and in a few minutes there was no sign of them, only a great, black cloud of smoke."

"What **did** happen to them, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"No one knows exactly what did happen, dear. It might have been a volcano that rose in the middle of the plain, spouting fire, though some say that the whole plain was like a shell over a great bed of oil and pitch which exploded at the first ray of sunlight. One thing we do not, and that is that the whole valley was turned into salt. The lake that had been full of fish, and the hills and the ruins of the cities, all turned into salt, and they are still there today as a monument of the great power of God to punish wicked men."

Very recently explorers dug up the ruins of the house in Sodom where Lot lived. They say his name was over the door and a notice that he was running for mayor of the city.

They said a boy had scratched a note under the notice that read 'And he won'. So Lot at one time must have been the mayor of Sodom.

"What happened to Lot's wife, Mummy; was she burned up too?"

"The Bible says she turned into salt, and even today there is a pillar of salt by the Dead Sea that looks like a woman, and the people call it Lot's wife."

"What a terrible thing to happen to all those people, Mummy."

"Terrible in a way Linnet, but God is always merciful and kind. He does not let people suffer any He can help. They were mostly asleep when the disaster came and most of them never woke up. They died there instantly and never even knew what had happened. God's judgments are mostly like that. Sometimes when people get very wicked and will not obey God, He sends the soldiers of another nation to punish them. That is often far worse than when God sends a great disaster, for soldiers are often far more cruel than God would be. But, dear one, we must remember this. All the people of this world are children of Adam, and all are condemned to death anyway. People can suffer just as much from sickness as in any other way, and death must come to everyone. God looks ahead and knows the future; He knows that all who die will be awakened again in His Kingdom and then they will remember the lessons they learned here and will try to do what is right."

"Will the people of Sodom and the other wicked cities wake up then too, Mummy?"

"Yes, darling. We have Jesus' own words to tell us that they will, for He said '*The people of Sodom and Gomorrah shall rise up in the judgment day together with the people of this generation (that is those who were listening to Him) and will condemn you, for it the great deeds I have done among you had been done there, the people would have repented.*' They fell asleep, and when they wake up they will be surprised to learn how long they have slept. They will be taught of all the dreadful things that have come to the people of the world because of their sins and they will then do what is right. They believed their wicked leaders and teachers and did not know how bad they were."

"Was that a picture too, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"Yes, darling. It was a picture that is soon to be fulfilled. Sodom pictured the world and showed how the world would get worse and worse and the people would become very selfish, until God would send a great trouble, not like **that** but a great time of trouble, war and revolutions and sickness, and other kinds of trouble, to punish the people of the world. That great trouble started some years ago, and then God stopped it for a time to see if the people had learned, but they did not turn to Him or try to serve Him. Now the trouble continues to the end of this age."

"But Mummy, we are trying to serve Him. Will we be punished, too?"

"Those who are trying to serve God, Linnet, are pictured by Lot. He listened to the angels and obeyed them, and he was saved. Those who trust in God will be protected by His angels, dear one. Sometimes the best way God can protect His children is by letting them fall asleep. They know that He will wake them up and bless them when the trouble is over. So, no matter what happens, Linnet, always go to Him for help if the way

seems dark. Even in the midst of the trouble, God will be watching over you. No one can tell in these dark days just what is going to happen, but we must remember always that God is riding the clouds of trouble and nothing can happen to His little ones without His permission. He will never send anything that will not work out for our good if we trust Him. Keep your faith in Him and never doubt His goodness.”

“Everyone will not be killed in the trouble, will they Mummy? God will watch over and keep us all through it if we trust Him, won’t He?” Linnnet asked.

“Indeed He will, dear. He has said ‘*Call upon me in the time of trouble and I will deliver you.*’ He has also promised to bring the ‘third part’ of the people safely through it. You see, dear, God sent the trouble many years ago when Sandy was a baby and it lasted for four terrible years. Then God stopped it, to see if the people had learned the lessons He wished to teach them. If they had served Him and obeyed Him there would have been no need of the things that are happening today. Instead, they did not want peace but went to work to try and make still more terrible things to kill other people with. Every country made bigger and better guns, aeroplanes, tanks and other fiendish devices to bring death and destruction to their fellow men. Then, when millions of people were starving in one part of the world, other governments destroyed food that would have saved them. They burned wheat, drowned pigs and destroyed coffee rather than send it to the starving Chinese people. They would not even feed and care for the poor in their own lands but left them to starve while they stored away millions of dollars for war.”

“But the poor people could not help that, could they Mummy?”

“They had a good chance to change their system of government, but as soon as God stopped the trouble for them they set out to have all the fun they could, and most of them cared for nothing but having fun. Some of the wiser ones tried their best to rouse the people, but they would not do a thing, and soon it was plain that unless more trouble was sent half the world would be feasting and the other half starving. The rich wanted to make slaves of the poor and cut their wages till they could not have any comforts. The old people were given a tiny pension that just kept them from starving – if they had been most of their lives in one state or province. If not, they could die of starvation for all any government cared. Soon nearly half the people of the world had no work and not enough food, while all the wealth was in the hands of a few people who would not let it go. Yes, God gave the world twenty-five years to profit by their lesson, and they only got worse. He gave the people of Nineveh forty years, you remember, before He had to destroy them because they would not do what was right. Now the trouble is coming again, and there will be only one safe place for anyone.”

“Where is that, Mummy?”

“It is everywhere, dear. Whenever anyone comes to God and puts himself under His care, God has promised him His protection in the midst of the trouble. They need simply trust Him, obey His laws and ask His help. He will keep them, and when the trouble is over He will set up His Kingdom and then He will give them His blessing. After that He will wake up those who have fallen asleep in death --a few at a time – as the people wish them, and soon the world will be filled with happy people again. There will not be any poor or hungry people, for everyone will share in all the goods things of earth. Here is a verse to learn and remember always – ‘*The ransomed of the Lord* (and that means everyone who has ever lived because God’s Word says “*He gave Himself a ransom for*

*all') shall return and come to Zion (that is God's Kingdom) with songs and everlasting joy, and sorrow and sighing shall flee away."*

"I love that verse, Mummy, and I will always remember it", Linnet said, and Mrs Grey left her to think things over, hoping that the seed had fallen into good ground where it would bring forth much fruit.

## **Chapter 7: A Great Sacrifice**

Isaac – who in triumphant faith was laid  
Upon God's altar on Moriah's mount,  
Was but a picture of a Greater Seed  
Who was to come. They could not understand  
God's purpose in that offering or its need,  
Nor why He should at last have stayed the hand  
Of Abraham, whose faith had proved so great  
That he would serve God to the bitter end,  
Knowing He could restore to life's estate  
The son whose sacrifice He did demand.

To those who are His Children, God reveals  
That they must have the faith of these two men,  
Nor seek their treasure from Him to conceal  
But simply trust Him – who doeth all things well-  
To all His sacred promises fulfil,  
Like Isaac's, unto death their sacrifice,  
A willing offering on God's altar laid,  
Nor will He fail. His mercy will suffice  
To shower blessings on each humble head.

"I guess Abraham must have felt that God had failed him, Mummy, when Sodom was all burned up; or did Lot go back to him?"

Linnet had been thinking of the story of the city that was destroyed and these were the words with which she greeted her mother the next morning when, waking early, she stole to Mrs Grey's room for a few minutes' chat before Mother got up to prepare breakfast. Linnet was sitting on the edge of the bed as she spoke.

"Better come in under the covers, Linnet. It is not very warm this morning", Mrs Grey said, turning the covers down, and Linnet stole in beside her.

"It's early and we can have a little talk before time to get up. Daddy had a restless night and went to his study to try and get a little sleep. Now what was that question?"

Linnet repeated the question, her golden head on Mother's shoulder and Mother's arm around her.

"No, dear one, Lot went away from Zoar for he was afraid that it might be destroyed later but he didn't go back to Abraham, at least not right away. He took his daughters and gathered up what remained of his herds and flocks and lived in the hills, as Abraham did. Many a good man has made the same mistake of thinking he could live among wicked

people and keep his family clean and good. Lot would have been much better off if he had followed Abraham's example. He lost his wife and nearly all his wealth and all but the two young girls of his family.

"Abraham saw the smoke of the cities and knew that God had not found even ten good men among them. It was some time before he knew that Lot was saved but his faith in God made him satisfied that He would not punish the good for the sins of the wicked. Some time after that the little baby God promised to Sarah was born and there was great rejoicing in the tents of Abraham. Hagar was not so well pleased and Ishmael was very angry. He had always been counted as the prince and heir of all the wealth of Abraham. He knew that his mother was just a slave girl but he may have hoped that he would still be the heir as he was the oldest son. Ishmael was not as kind as he might have been to the baby, for he was jealous. He was about fifteen himself, and a big boy and strong, but he had no love for the little brother and teased and tormented him, and showed his dislike in many ways. Hagar may have tried to make him behave but she was none too pleased to see another little boy come into the tents.

"Things did not go very well. Sarah was annoyed at the treatment Isaac got but she made the best of it till the baby was about two years old or more, and then they gave a feast for all their friends in honour of the little prince of the tribe. That made Hagar and Ishmael rather angry for no such feast had ever been given for Ishmael. Abraham loved him but he had understood from the angel that Ishmael would not be his heir and that the promise would not go to him, so he had not given a feast for him. That feast made it clear to everyone that Isaac would be the recognised prince. While they were celebrating Sarah noticed Ishmael making fun of Isaac and mocking him and she was afraid that in his jealousy he might hurt the little fellow. After the feast was over she went to Abraham and asked him to send Hagar and Ishmael away lest some harm come to Isaac.

"Abraham was troubled for he loved Ishmael even if he was not a very good boy. He did not know what to do, so he went away by himself and prayed to God to show him what action he should take. God's angel answered him and said, 'You must listen to the voice of Sarah in this thing. Ishmael shall not be your heir nor shall he share in the inheritance with Isaac. I have given you my promise and my blessing and these both shall go to Isaac.'

"Then, seeing that Abraham felt pretty badly about sending his son away, the angel said, 'Do not feel grieved over this. I will make a great nation of Ishmael also and I will watch over him because he is your child.'

"Abraham felt better then and the next morning he called Hagar and Ishmael and gave them food and water and sent them away. Perhaps he gave them money as well."

"Where did they go, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"They started out to go to Egypt where Hagar's people had lived, but on the way Ishmael took sick and Hagar's water supply ran out. There were many springs in the wilderness, but Ishmael was ill and Hagar could not carry him for he was a big fellow, about sixteen and like a man, and she would not leave him there all alone while she went to hunt for water. She thought he was going to die and she made him comfortable under one of the bushes where the sun would not shine on him, and went away a little, for she felt she

could not bear to see her child die. She was crying from grief and loneliness when she heard a voice say 'Why are you crying? Did I not promise you that this son of yours should be the head of a great nation. Go and lift him up and give him a drink. There is lots of water here.' And then she saw, what she had not seen before, a spring of fresh, cool water close by."

"I'll bet she was glad, Mummy."

"I am sure she was, Linnet. She filled her water bottle and gave Ishmael a drink and a fell asleep, and in a while he wakened all well again. They talked it over and decided to stay there and camp by the stream. Ishmael was a good hunter and there was plenty to eat so they got along all right. They were used to living very simply and probably found a cave to live in till they could get skins enough to make a tent. God had said that this boy should be a wild man, and he was. He and his tribe were often robbers who attacked caravans and stole the goods of travellers. After a few years Hagar went down to Egypt and chose a bride for Ishmael, and in time the angel's promise was fulfilled for Ishmael had twelve sons who grew up to be wild men of the desert. They lived in tents and travelled from place to place and were very quarrelsome. Indeed, . Do you remember what they pictured, Linnet?"

"I think you told me once that they were a picture of the Twelve Tribes of Israel, Mummy, or was it of the Jews who had been wanderers ever since Jesus died?"

"Yes, dear. They pictured the Jewish people who had no settled home since they persecuted and rejected that Prince God chose to rule over them. After Hagar and Ishmael were sent away life was quiet and peaceful in the tent of Abraham. Isaac grew up to be a lovely, thoughtful boy, and Abraham and Sarah taught him to know and love God. Abraham had kept the tablets I told you of. There was now that first tablet which was given to Adam and told of the creation of the world; the one Adam wrote. Then came the one Noah wrote which told of the evil world. Noah's three sons wrote the next tablet and it is signed in Gen.10:1. The story of the flood was in it. There is a short tablet written and signed by Shem that tells of Nmrod and gives a list of the sons of Ham, Shem and Japheth. It also tells of the building of Babel and the changing of the people's speech. Terah had added the history of his family and Abraham then wrote a long tablet also, but it seems he never finished it or signed it, but Isaac and Ishmael closed it and added their notes."

"Mummy, why is our Bible all set out in chapters and verses and the tablets end often in the middle of a chapter? You would think it would be one tablet to a chapter", Linnet said, rather puzzled.

"God chooses many strange ways to hide His truth from all but the really earnest student, Linnet, and often from him also till the right time comes to make it known. The tablets were kept till Moses came, by the Children of Israel. Then Moses, seeing that the tablets were apt to be cracked or broken during the long years of wandering in the Wilderness, copied them out, word for word, on parchment or sheepskin. He did not separate them into chapters but just copied the record as it was on the tablets. Moses had studied in Egypt and had learned both the Egyptian language and the Hebrew, and must have also known how to write and read the old Babylonian writing, too. He copied the tablets into the Hebrew language so the people could understand them better. Then when the Hebrews made copies of the Books of Moses they lost sight of where one

record stopped and another began. After a while they forgot even that they had once been tablets but read them as if they were a book. Someone, many years later, decided to separate them into chapters but not knowing what that statement meant *'This is the record of'* or that the name that followed was the signature of the writer, they divided them in the wrong place, while they were very careful not to change the wording, even if they could not understand it."

"God could have made them divide the chapters in the right place, could He not, Mummy?"

"He could, dear one, but He wished to hide certain things from the people and He knew that a time would come when men who thought themselves very wise would be puzzled by those old books and would tell people that they were just fairy tales. He also knew that when the right time came for the people to understand all about His Word, He would see that they found old tablets and read them and so would find out the truth about the Bible. That time has come at last and the old tablets are being dug up every day to prove God's Word. Now dear, we have wandered a long way from our story. The part of the Bible which contains our story was written by Abraham himself or by Isaac."

"Who signed it, Mummy?"

"It is signed by both Ishmael and Isaac, but as it contains things only Abraham could know, it is thought to have been either dictated to them by Abraham or written by Abraham as notes, just like people keep a diary nowadays, and the notes copied by his two sons after he died and their notes added and signed. You will find the story in Genesis 22 and can read it whenever you wish. Isaac was about thirty years old; we are not told his exact age, but he was a picture of Jesus at the time He was thirty, when God's angel came to Abraham and said to him, 'Abraham, I want you to do something for me.' Abraham said, 'I will do whatever you wish, Lord.' Then the angel said, 'I want you to take your only son, Isaac, whom you love and go to the land of Moriah and offer him there was a burnt offering to me on one of the mountains which I will show you.'

"Abraham could not understand God's reason for asking him to do what must have seemed to be a terrible thing, even in those days when the people around who worshipped idols often sacrificed their children to them. It was only his great faith in God that made him realise that God would not ask such a thing without a good reason. He did not ask God why nor did he try to get out of it or argue with God; he trusted that God would find a way to keep His promise if **he** did **his** part, so the next morning he called Isaac and said, 'Isaac, God has called me to go to the land of Moriah and offer a sacrifice here to Him. I want you to go with me.' Isaac was quite willing and they gathered dry wood and took a fire basket with fire, for there were no matches, and food for the journey, which would take three days each way, and a knife to kill the sacrifice, and started out. Isaac must have wondered why his father did not take a lamb too, but he would think, 'It will be easy to get a lamb on the way and save carrying it so far.' Two servants went with them to help them.

"They loaded the food and the wood for the sacrifice on asses, and the servants drove the animals. Abraham was very old and he would ride part of the way."

"Why did they have to take wood, Mummy? Would there not be lots of branches on the mountain?" Linnet asked.



"I imagine it was because they would have to have very dry wood to start a fire that would burn a sacrifice, dear, and the wood on the mountain-top would be damp and not easy to make a fire of. They travelled three days, resting at night and keeping the fire in the basket going all the time. Then they reached the foot of the mountain God had told Abraham of. There he told the servants to wait for them and he took the wood off the ass and put it on Isaac's shoulders and told him to carry it while he took the fire and his knife. They still had not purchased a lamb."

"Mummy, the picture in my story book shows Isaac as a little boy. Why is that?"

"It is because the people who painted those pictures did not understand the full meaning of the story, Linnet. They thought Isaac must have been a little boy for his father to be able to make a sacrifice of him, for they knew Abraham was an old man. You see, a young man would be strong and able to fight and they felt that no grown man would ever let his father kill him and burn him as a sacrifice to God. They did not realise that Isaac was a picture of Jesus who, as a grown man, let Himself be killed as a sacrifice to pay Adam's debt. As they climbed the hill Isaac began to realise what his father intended to do. He said 'Father, you have brought wood and fire, but where is the lamb?' Abraham could not bear to tell him what God had asked, so he just said '*God will provide a lamb for Himself, Isaac.*'"

"Isaac must have thought it over and realised that he was the one God had asked Abraham to offer as a sacrifice. He could have run away then if he had wished, but his trust and faith in God were as great as Abraham's. Without any complaint he carried the wood up the hill, and when they came to the place God had showed his father, Isaac put the wood down and helped his father build the altar. He must have seen how bad the old man was feeling, and I am sure Isaac put his hand on his father's shoulder and said, 'I understand, father. You must not feel badly. I am God's child and if He has told you to offer me as a sacrifice you must do as He says. He has promised that He will make a great nation of me and He will not fail to keep His promise. I am ready, father.' And I am sure he climbed right up on that altar himself and let his old father tie him so he would not move."

"Does the Bible say that he did, Mummy?"

"No, Linnet, but Isaac probably wrote that tablet himself, and even he did not understand why God had given that command. But we know that if a big boy chose to try and get away from an old man, he would be able to escape easily. If he had not been willing to give his life, he would not have been a true picture of Jesus, for Jesus did not try to avoid death but went calmly and willingly to the cross for us. Poor old Abraham loved Isaac better than his own life and would gladly have died in his place, but he would not disobey God whom he loved even better, so he took the knife in his hand and looked up to heaven. I am sure his eyes were dimmed with tears as he would say 'Here, Oh God, here is my only son. I am giving him to you as you have asked. I cannot understand why you wish me to take the life you have given, but Thy will be done. 'Then God said, 'Abraham, it is enough. I only wanted to see if you really loved me better even than your son. Do not harm the boy for now I know you will never fail to obey me, seeing you would even give me the son you love so well. I accept the gift as if it had been really sacrificed. Let him go.'"

“Abraham cut the cords that bound Isaac and helped him down, and I am sure they both stood there for a moment in each other’s arms and thanked God for His love, before they saw a ram that had been caught in a bush by its horns, and they killed it and offered it up for a sacrifice in Isaac’s place. Then God spoke to them and said, ‘By myself I have sworn that, because you have done this and have not even held back your son, I will bless you and will make your seed as numerous as the stars in heaven and like the sand of the seashore, and your seed shall possess the gate of his enemies and through him shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, because you have obeyed me.’”

“I guess they were pretty happy then, Mummy”, Linnet said.

“I am sure they were. Not only because Isaac was not sacrificed really, but because God had given them His blessing. You know, Linnet, there is nothing in all the world that can make a person feel happier than to know that he has pleased God. I think you know what that picture stood for without me telling you, dear.”

“Yes, Mummy. Abraham was a picture of God and Isaac was a picture of Jesus, and it was meant to show that God would send His own Son to die for us.”

“You are right, darling. Jesus came all the way to earth to be a willing sacrifice to take Adam’s place and die so we could live. Just as Isaac willingly went to Mount Moriah with his father to be a sacrifice to God. The ram was sacrificed in Isaac’s place and that showed how Jesus died in our place. God was also showing that it was impossible for us to have the great blessing He had promised unless someone died for us. For *‘The Son of man came to give His life a ransom.’* Matt.20:28.

“Now, dear one, I hear Daddy getting up and I must get his breakfast. What do you say if we have a race and see who can be dressed first.”

Linnet laughed and ran for her clothes, and a merry race followed, but Mother knew her little girl had not forgotten the lesson of the morning.

**Editor note:** References in chapter 7 are to events, which occurred during the years that lead up to World War Two. The same sort of problems are still present today

## Chapter 8: Lessons in Faith

What though the way is narrow  
With storm clouds overhead,  
And boulders strew the pathway  
Our weary feet must tread.  
Though briars snare our footsteps  
And mists obscure our way,  
We know it leads us onward  
To clear and perfect day.  
We have the Father’s promise  
That bids all doubting cease,  
“My presence shall go with thee,  
And I will give thee peace.”

“What is my little girl thinking of?” Mrs Grey asked that evening as she was brushing her little girl’s hair. “You seem very quiet tonight.”

"I was wondering if you had a story for me tonight, Mummy, and then I got to thinking about the story you told me in bed this morning and how it was the same story in my *'Ten Camels'* book, and I wondered, Mummy, why could God not just forgive Adam and then Jesus would not have had to suffer and die?"

"So you recognised the story, did you? Well, dear, that is one story you cannot hear too often. Now, why could God not just forgive Adam? Well dear, you know if a person makes a promise and does not keep it, people soon lose faith in him. Suppose God had said to Adam 'If you eat that fruit you will die' and then when Adam disobeyed God said 'I am sure you did not mean to do that. I will let you off this time', Adam would have lost faith in God's Word. Now when God would not break His promise even though it cost the life of His own dear Son, we know He will keep every promise He has made in just the same way. So when He promised to restore the whole world and make it like Eden, we know that nothing will prevent Him from doing it."

"Yes, I can see that, Mummy. It seemed a terrible thing that Jesus should have to suffer so because Adam was bad, though."

"There is a famous old story, Linnet, about two men who were travelling in a country far from their home. They were very good friends and loved each other dearly. One man did something that brought the anger of the king of the country upon him. I think, if I remember rightly, that he killed a friend of the king by accident. Well, in this country there was only one punishment for killing a man. The one who did it must pay for it with his own life."

"That is God's law, is it not, Mummy, an eye for an eye and a tooth for a tooth and a man's life for a man's life?" Linnet asked.

"Yes, dear. That law was first given by our Heavenly Father. He that takes another man's life, by man shall his life be taken. It is the law of perfect justice. Well, the man who killed the king's friend did not mean to do it but the law would not let him off on that account. He was arrested and taken before the king for trial and the king said he must die. He was a married man and had some little children, and while he realised that the law could not be broken, he wished very much to see his wife and children again. That was the thing that hurt him most. His friend knew how he felt and wished to help him. The king said, 'Before you die, is there anything you wish?' The man said 'I would like to see my wife and children and explain things to them and say goodbye. I would not mind dying so much then. Would you let me go to see them? I would come right back.' The king laughed and said 'Yes? That is a likely story. You would get away and then you would laugh at us for fools.' Then he thought of a way to test the friendship of the two men and said 'Now if someone would take your place and act as a hostage for you, that would be different.'

"The man's chum said 'I would be glad to take his place. I would even die for him. He is married and his wife and family need him but there is no one who cares about me or would miss me. Let me die in his place and set him free.'

"But the king said 'No. That will not do but I will tell you what I will do. If you will consent to remain in prison in your friend's place for three months while he goes home to visit his wife and say goodbye, I will let him go free for three months. If he does not come back,

then you must die in his place.' The young man agreed and the friends parted, the young man to go to jail in his friend's place and the married man to say goodbye to his wife and children. The king thought the young man was a fool to trust his life to his friend and never expected to see the married man again. Three months passed and he had not returned, and the day came when the young man was to die in his place. He was glad, for he had hoped and prayed that his friend might be delayed. The friend had reached home safely and had spent a month arranging everything so his wife would be taken care of after his death. He had started out in good time to go back and set his young friend free but storms had delayed his ship. On the last day he reached the town where they had been imprisoned and he hurried to the jail just in time to save the young man who was about to be killed. The king was amazed at the love that would lead a man to race back to save his friend from death, but more amazed when he saw the young man cry with disappointment and sorrow that he had been unable to save his friend. When he saw how real was the love between them he said, 'Let them both go free. Such a love is too wonderful to be destroyed.'"

"That is a beautiful story, Mummy. It would be nice to have friends like that" Linnet said. "I am glad the king let them both go free."

"Jesus said *'Greater love hath no man than this, that a man lay down his life for his friend.'* So Jesus showed how much He loved us by being willing to die for us. When we realise how much Jesus loved us, it makes us love Him very dearly too. Jesus knew that the surest way to win the love of mankind was to show His great love for them. God, too, showed us His love by being willing to give something that was very precious to us. By His great Plan, God then has showed us that we can always trust His promises and He has proved His love. When all men understand what God and Jesus did for them, they will learn to love them and serve them. Satan has tried to keep man from learning of God's love, so he has caused all sorts of false teachings to be told to men to keep them from loving Him.

"Suppose the married man in our story had been a mean, nasty, wicked man, the young friend would not have been willing to die for him. It was because he was a fine man and a good friend and one who loved him, that the young man wanted to take his place. So the Bible says *'God showed His great love for us in that while we were still sinners Christ died for us.'* The love of God and of Jesus will be made known to all the world in the Kingdom that is coming so soon, Linnet. Then everyone will love them. It is because of God's faithfulness that we can trust Him fully and know that He will keep all His promises."

'Mummy, was it not Isaac whom the other story in my Camel book was about? The one whose father sent his servant away into another country to choose a wife for him?'

"Yes, darling. Abraham sent his servant Eleazer to Haran, where Abraham's brother and his family were still living, to choose a bride for him who would be one of the worshippers of the true God. The towns all around were filled with idol worshippers and Abraham did not want Isaac to marry one of them. Isaac was now over thirty years old and the picture of the sacrifice of Jesus was complete, so God caused news to be brought to Abraham that his brother had a large family in Haran. Sarah had died when Isaac was about thirty years old and he felt pretty lonely. Abraham had seen this and he thought Isaac should

have a wife but he was too old himself to undertake a long journey to find just the right woman for him, so, as your book tells you, he sent his servant.

“Now I wonder how much you can remember of that story and what it pictured? First, who did Abraham picture?”

“He pictured God, Mummy, and his servant pictured God’s spirit or power sent to choose the true Church to be a bride for Jesus”, Linnet answered as she jumped into bed and pulled up the covers.

“Good, and Isaac pictured Jesus. What were the ten camels, Linnet?”

“They were the truths of God’s Word, Mummy, that were in the stories the camels carried.”

“That is fine. I see that you’ve not forgotten. Now where did the servant find Rebekah? Do you remember?”

“She was getting water from the well, Mummy, and water pictured the truth.”

“That is correct. So God’s servant found the true Church getting truth from the source of all truth – God’s Word. He gave her golden bracelets and earrings to show that her hands were to be used in God’s services and her ears were to hear His Word. Then Laban, her brother, who pictures those who love truth but are not of the true Church, entertained the servant of Abraham in his home. Rebekah, who pictured the true Church, was willing to give up all the pleasures of this life and leave everything to be with Jesus. Rebekah could not see Isaac till she had completed her journey. Then you remember, she got down off the camel and covered herself with a veil and waited for Isaac, whom she saw crossing the field to meet her. Do you remember what that pictured, dear?”

“Yes, Mummy. It meant that those who were of Jesus’ true Church would die before they could see Jesus.”

“Yes, dear. It is only by dying that they can get the new bodies God has promised them. They will not need the camels then for they will receive their commands from Jesus Himself.”

“It always makes me feel sad, Mummy, for I know you and Daddy both have given your lives to Jesus and you will some day go to be with Him. I wish I could go with you, Mummy.”

“That is in God’s hands, darling. You have always been very specially His child. We cannot tell what His plans may be for you but you can serve Him truly and learn all you can about Him and His Word. Perhaps He will want you to be a teacher in His Kingdom and you will always know that Mummy and Daddy, if they are called to go to Him, will be very close to you. We will not have to sleep for we gave our lives to Him and have followed Him always and have tried to do His will, so death just means a change to a form that can be with you and watch over you all the time. Because we did that, God has a special care over you, for He said *‘The promises should be to you and to your children.’* That means you, darling. You will always be able to call on God for help at any

time and He will hear you. If we should have to leave you, it would only mean that we could watch over you better. Now, when you are at school, I cannot see you or protect you. Then I could see you always. Your big sister, May, will care for you and she is, like yourself, a child of faith and under the Father's special care.

"Learn all you can of Him now, dear, and try to do His will in all things and leave the future to Him. He will give you the best there is. 'He knows, He loves, He cares, nothing this thought can dim; He gives the very best to those who leave the choice to Him.' Let your motto be like Job's, '*Though he slay me yet will I trust Him.*'"

"Now dear, Daddy is waiting for me and I must go down to him. Tomorrow, if we are spared and I can manage it, I will tell you of the twin boys Isaac and Rebekah had."

"I wonder if they were as naughty as the twins in our room at school, Mummy."

"I guess they were a handful, Linnet. Twin boys usually are," Mother smiled as she kissed her little girl goodnight.

## **Chapter 9: A Pair of Twin Boys**

Oh blessed rock in a weary land – our shelter,  
Though the earth removed, forever pass away.  
Safe in that cleft I'll hide me till the morning,  
Then sing His praise through the Eternal day.  
I'll serve Him now, who showed me this blest refuge,  
And taught me of His wondrous love for men,  
And though the way be dark and storm clouds threaten,  
I'll put my hand in His and trust Him then.

Two or three evenings passed before Mother and her little girl had another opportunity for a quiet talk. An older sister had come for a visit, bringing with her a lovely, mischievous baby girl who kept everyone employed in watching her and trying to keep her out of mischief. At last, however, Mrs Grey had an evening free while the baby slept and her mother was visiting friends.

"It's nice to have a baby around the house, Mummy, but I have missed our evenings together", Linnet said, slipping into her mother's arms for a hug and kiss. "I did not realise how much it meant to me till Joyce came."

"But you do not need Mother to read to you now, Linnet. You can read for yourself and when Mother cannot come to tell you a story you can read your books or the Bible", Mrs Grey answered.

"I know, Mummy, and I have read a lot of my Bible the past few nights but there are so many big words I cannot understand and things are not put the way we talk, so I cannot always tell what they mean. When you tell me a story, the people seem so real, then I like to find the stories for myself and read them in the Bible for I know what they mean. You were going to tell me about some twin babies, Mummy."

"Do you still want that story or have you had enough of babies today?" Mother laughed.

“At least there is only one of Beverly, Mummy. She is so very pretty and sweet but she does get into a lot of things.”

“Then you can imagine what a time Rebekah must have had when her two little boy babies came to the tent. There was one advantage, however. They did not have so many things to try and keep the babies out of. There were no sewing machines, no radios, no fine dishes to break.”

“I wonder if the babies were pretty and sweet, Mummy”, Linnet said, stretching out in her comfortable bed.

“I guess they seemed the very finest babies in the world to their mother, dear, but from what the Bible tells us I do not imagine they would appeal to you as much as your little niece does. We are told that Esau, who was a few minutes older than his brother Jacob, was all covered with fine hair and was quite red when he was a baby. Jacob was a better looking child for his skin was smooth and white.”

“I guess Esau would look more like a baby monkey then, Mummy”, Linnet laughed.

“At least Isaac and Rebekah loved them. They played around the tent together and they had no toys such as your little cousins have. No trikes or cars or trains, for there were no such things in the world then. The boys’ toys were bows and arrows, which they learned to use quite early, and their pets were baby camels and little lambs.”

“I always thought camels were terribly ugly, Mummy, till I saw some baby ones in the show, and they are so pretty and amusing”, Linnet remarked, “and I think a lamb is the sweetest thing one could have for a pet.”

Mother smiled and continued, “Well, Isaac’s two boys grew up and they soon showed that they were as different in nature as in looks. Esau loved to go away out in the hills and hunt with spears or bow and arrows, but Jacob preferred to stay around the tents and help his father and mother. You saw in the picture-show how they made bread and how they sat around in the sand or on the grass to eat, and did not have nice china plates or knives and forks, as we do. The old grandfather was still living and he must have been very fond of the boys, but he was lonely now that Sarah was dead and Isaac married, so he took another wife. Her name was Keturah and they had six little boys, and perhaps there were girls too, for the Bible seldom mentions the girl children. So Isaac’s two boys would have some little folk to play with. As they grew older, however, Abraham gave them gifts and sent them away into other parts of the country to build homes for themselves.”

“Mummy, if Sarah was a picture of the Promise God gave to Abraham, and Hagar was a picture of the Law, and their children were pictures of the true Church and the Jewish nation, did Abraham’s new wife also picture something?” Linnet asked, showing that she had not forgotten how God’s dealings with those people were always pictures of things to come.

“Yes, darling. It is thought that Keturah was meant as a picture of the New Covenant God is going to make with the people of the earth when Jesus’ Kingdom comes in, and their children pictured the races of happy people who will fill all the earth as a result. We are told little of them for the things they picture will not come till the Kingdom.

When Jacob and Esau had grown up to be men and Isaac was getting old, Esau went away out in the hills to hunt one day. He was gone for some time and could not find anything to shoot and not much wild fruit to eat, so he got very hungry. The boys were very different in nature. Jacob was deeply interested in God's plan for having a Kingdom in the earth and he had often listened to the stories Abraham and Isaac could tell about God's dealing with men. They may have studied the old tablets and must have learned to read and write the language used then. They would have no slates or books but would use the sand to write in and sticks for pencils. Jacob loved to hear of God and of the flood and Noah and of Adam and Eve. He was specially interested in the promise that 'the Seed of the woman should bruise the serpent's head', and he knew of God's promise that this 'Seed' would come from Isaac's family. He knew of the sacrifice on Mount Moriah and how God had stopped Abraham's hand and had made His covenant with him and with Isaac. Jacob longed to be the one who would inherit that promise and God's blessing. Esau thought it was all foolishness. He was more interested in getting enough to eat and wear.

"Esau was like most people today. When we try to tell them that Jesus is coming to set up His Kingdom, they say 'Oh that promise is thousands of years old, and even if it ever is fulfilled, it will probably be thousands of years more. I am more interested in who wins this week's baseball match, also whether I will be able to get a better job and enough money to buy a house.' So Esau laughed at Jacob's dreams and visions and spent his time hunting and fishing. Jacob knew that Esau was a few minutes older and that the oldest son generally got the property and blessing of his father. This worried him, for he knew that Esau did not care about God's promise, but their father seemed to have the deepest love for Esau, who would go out and hunt for wild goats and bring them home and make the most delicious stews for the old man.

"That was how it happened that, on the day we are speaking of, when Esau came home very hungry and said 'Jacob, let me have your dinner, I am too hungry and tired to go and cook something for myself', Jacob thought here was a good chance to make a bargain with his brother. Jacob had cooked a fine dish of lentils for himself and he was hungry too. No doubt there was bread and other things cooked, but that stew just appealed to hungry Esau. Jacob thought 'I may never get another chance to make a bargain with Esau. He generally has everything he wants', so he said 'I'm hungry myself. If I give you the dinner I have cooked, I will have to go and make something else.'

"But I am tired. I feel as if I should die if I had to go another minute without something to eat. Some on, you have not been hunting all day. Let me have it. Let me have some, anyway.'

"I will tell you what I will do, Esau. If you will give me the right of the oldest son to our father's blessing and the favour of God that goes with it, I will give you all my dinner and go and cook something else.'

"Esau laughed. 'Always hoping to be the promised "Seed" are you not? I care nothing for that promise, I can always make a living hunting. All right, give me the dinner and you can have the blessing. It will probably not be given for many generations, if ever. Our father never got much out of it and neither did our grandfather. A good meal means more to me.'



“So we are told that Esau despised his birthright. Jacob knew his brother though and was sure that while he might **now** say he would let his right as oldest son go, after he had eaten and had time to think it over he would begin to regret his action and want to go back on his bargain. He knew, too, that he would not be so quick to change if he had taken an oath, so he said, ‘Would you be willing to swear to our bargain? Will you swear to let me take the place of eldest son from now on and to let me have our father’s chiefest blessing in exchange for my dinner?’

“What’s the matter? Scared I’ll go back on my word? What good would a blessing be to me if I died of hunger? Sure I’ll swear to it. Come on, give me that stew.’

“So the bargain was made but after he had eaten and rested Esau began to get sore about it, just as Jacob knew he would. But he did not try to get the birthright back. Jacob was content. Had he only known and understood God better, he would have known that God would see he got the blessing without trying to drive such a hard bargain with Esau. He may have known that it had been prophesied before they were born that the blessing would be his. He failed to remember that God gives His blessing to whom He will, no matter if he is the eldest son or not. Time passed and that bargain caused hard feeling between the brothers. After some years Isaac took very ill and the illness affected his eyes so badly that he was blind. He became worried and thought he was going to die. Then he thought he would give the boys his blessing in case he did not get better. He still loved Esau best and meant to give him the place of oldest son and the blessing of God, so he called Esau and said, ‘Go out in the hills and get a wild goat and make me some of that fine stew and I will give you my blessing.’

“Now if Esau had been honest he would have said, ‘I cannot take it. I sold it to Jacob’, but he did not. He stole away without a word, thinking that he would get his place back. Rebekah heard Isaac’s words and she knew of the bargain the boys had made and the prophecy that the first blessing should go to Jacob. But she, too, failed to realise that nothing could stand in the way of God’s plan but thought only that Esau meant to fool his brother and take the blessing that was Jacob’s by right, so she went to Jacob and told him.

“Jacob was troubled. He wanted that blessing more than all his father’s wealth. Rebekah said, ‘I know how you feel, son. Do as I say and you will have your desire. Go out and kill a young kid and I will make the stew your father likes. He cannot tell the difference.’ Now Rebekah might have gone to Isaac and explained things to him, but he was sick and she did not want to upset him and she knew he was set on giving that blessing to Esau.

“Jacob said, ‘But Mother, if Dad chances to touch me he will know the difference. He may not notice my voice, but my skin is smooth and Esau is as rough and hairy as a goat.’ But Rebekah thought of a way. They got the young kid and killed it and skinned it, and while the stew was cooking Rebekah quickly stitched up some gloves of the still moist skin and took a piece of the skin and suck it on Jacob’s neck.

“As soon as the stew was cooked Jacob put on the gloves and took the dish of meat to his father. Isaac said, ‘How is that?’ ‘It is I, father. Here is the stew you asked for. Eat it now and give me the blessing as you promised.’ Now Jacob did not expect to have to tell a direct lie but when we try to deceive anyone we are apt to find it is not so easy. Isaac thought the voice sounded like Jacob’s and he said, ‘Are you really Esau? How did you manage to get a goat so quickly? I did not expect you for hours.’

“Of course I am Esau.’ Jacob tried to make his voice sound more like his brother’s. ‘The Lord guided me and I found a goat very quickly. Come, eat the stew I have prepared.’

“Isaac was still suspicious and said, ‘Come nearer so I can feel your neck and hands and see if it is really Esau.’

“When he felt the hairy hands and neck he was convinced but he said ‘The hands are the hands of Esau but the voice is Jacob’s voice.’ However, he gave him the blessing, believing he was giving it to his favourite son. I expect Jacob felt pretty much ashamed but he could not back out without letting Isaac know Rebekah’s part and she was listening.”

“Did Isaac eat the stew, Mummy?”

“Yes, he ate it first and then Jacob knelt before him and he put his hand on the young man’s head and said *May God give you the dew of heaven and the fatness of the earth and plenty of corn and wine; may many people serve you and nations bow down to you. You shall be lord over your brothers and your mother’s sons shall bow down to you. Whoever curses you shall be cursed himself, and whoever blesses you shall be blessed.*”

“What did Esau do when he found out, Mummy?”

“Well, when he got back after a long walk in search of a wild goat, neither Rebekah or Jacob said a word about what had happened. They let him go ahead and make his stew and get it all ready for his father. When he took it to Isaac he said, ‘Here you are, father. Sit up now and have some of this stew. I have fixed it just the way you like it. Then you may give me your blessing.’

“But who are you?’ Isaac said, troubled and puzzled.

“I am Esau, your oldest son.’

“But who was it then that brought me stew awhile ago and I have eaten of his stew and blessed him? I cannot change the blessing I have given.’

“Esau was terribly disappointed. He cried out ‘Oh my father, please give me your blessing.’

“Your brother has come and deceived me and has obtained the blessing I intended for you’, Isaac said sadly. Perhaps he felt that he should never have planned to give to Esau a blessing he knew God intended for Jacob. Esau was very angry and said, ‘Surely he was rightly named, for does not Jacob mean “The Supplanter” (that is, one gains what should belong to another). Twice he has gained what should have been mine, for did he not persuade me to sell him my birthright and now he has taken the chief blessing also. Surely you have reserved some blessing for me.’

“Then Isaac said *‘I have made him your master and have given him all his brethren for servants and have asked for riches and blessing for him, what can I give to you?’*

"Esau was so hurt and disappointed that he cried. Then Isaac said, *'This blessing I give you, my son. Your dwelling shall be the fatness of the land and the dew of heaven above. You will live by your sword and you shall serve your brother but the time will come when your children shall free themselves from his children.'*"

"It was not much of a blessing, was it, Mummy?"

"No dear. If Isaac had not tried to give him so much, he would have had more. Isaac thought he was giving him everything but God had no intention of letting Esau be ruler over Jacob, even if Isaac did love him best. Isaac realised that he had tried to go against God's will, I think, for he was not unkind to Jacob, and when Rebekah heard Esau planning to kill his brother and went to Isaac, the old man agreed to send Jacob to Rebekah's people till Esau should get over his anger.

"Esau had married some heathen women from the nearby towns and they were a great trial to his parents. Rebekah said, 'I could not stand it if Jacob also married the heathen women of this country.' So Isaac called his son and blessed him and told him to go to his mother's home and to be sure and marry a woman from her people who would love and serve the true God."

"I guess it would have been better if Jacob had not tried to get the blessing, Mummy," Linnet said. "It was rather selfish of him."

"Yes dear, it was. The real cause of their trouble was a lack of faith in God, I think. You see, if Jacob had really had the deep faith he should have had, he would have waited for God to fix things for him and not have tried to work out God's plans. If Rebekah had known God better, she would not have tried to deceive Isaac, and if Isaac had as much faith as he should have had he would not have tried to change God's plans and give a blessing to the son he liked best."

"But Mummy, Isaac should have had faith in God", Linnet said, "He knew God's power."

"Yes dear. I guess it was because he was ill and his love for Esau was so great. Then there was another reason. God was making a picture and they had to fit that picture, so He had caused things to work out just that way."

"What did the picture mean, Mummy?"

"Do you remember a little toy telephone Daddy bought you some years ago, Linnet? The one that had a man's face on it, and when you picked up the receiver and started to talk the man's face changed. He laughed one minute and looked sad and finally angry?"

"Oh yes, Mummy. It was so funny I felt so bad when one of my chums broke it."

"Well dear, this picture of God's reminds me a bit of that, for it seems to change as you look at it. You remember that Isaac pictured Jesus. Well, that would suggest that the twin boys might picture the two classes in the true Church. There are those who love God and His law so much that they would do anything to get His favour. They have great faith in Him too, and there are those who are also His children but who, like Esau, would sell their rights to a place in His Kingdom for a little fun or pleasure or a good meal. God does not look at things as we do. He knows that He can train a person who really loves

Him and has faith in Him and can teach him to do His will, but the person who puts pleasure first will lose God's blessing.

"That is one view of this picture. Another is that Isaac represents God and the twin boys picture the Jewish nation and the Church taken from the Gentile nations. The Jewish nation belonged to God first and the blessings of the Kingdom were theirs by right of birth, but when Jesus came to them they placed their own wishes first, and rather than risk displeasing the Romans who ruled over them, they sold their birthright. They showed that they preferred their own will and plans to God's and would rather be rich, even if it meant losing God's favour. Then God gave His message to the Gospel Church among the Gentiles and they had faith and the blessing came to them. 'He took the Kingdom from them (the Jews) and gave it to a nation bringing forth the fruits thereof.'

"Then again - and perhaps this is the true meaning - we might say that Esau pictures the Jewish people and the careless Christians both, while Jacob pictures those everywhere who have a real faith in and love of God and a desire for His favour. God gives His favour to all of every nation who wish, most of all things, for His love and favour. They may not always do what people think is right but God can train them for His service. Others may seek His favour for selfish reasons but they will not have it. God had repeated His promise to Isaac and had told him that his seed should be as the '*stars of heaven and as the sand of the sea.*' The stars are bright lights in heaven but the same is earthly and colourless. So the earthly seed was pictured by Esau, who represented those who would some day be blessed and be free from the rule of the Church when they had learned to do God's will, while Jacob pictured the stars in heaven or the true Church who would get the real blessings of God through their faith in Him.

"Darling, always hold fast to your faith in God and put His will first, and you will receive the real blessing of God. Now, dear, I think that is quite enough for tonight, and I have work to do. Goodnight, dear one. Here is a verse for you to remember: *This is the victory that overcomes the world, even your faith.*'

"Do you understand the story, Linnet, or is there any question you wish to ask before I turn out the light?"

"I don't quite understand what you meant by the two seeds, Mummy, and that people would some day be free."

"I guess I did not make that quite clear. The stars pictured the true Church who would be rulers over the earth in the Kingdom. The sand pictured the people of the whole world, both Jews and Gentiles, who would be raised from the dead and live on the earth. For one thousand years they will be ruled over by Christ and the Church. Then God will test them again. All who fail to pass that test will die. Those who prove faithful will then be perfect and will then come under the direct rule of Jehovah, our Heavenly Father. The Church will not rule over them. That is how they will be set free from the younger brother's rule. Is that clear?"

"Yes, Mummy, I understand now. You may turn out the light and I can lie and think about what you have told me till I go to sleep."

## **Chapter 10: A Wonderful Dream**

Night slowly drew its ebon curtain o'er the glowing sky  
While bright stars twinkled down across the night  
And Jacob sought a hollow where his weary frame might lie  
Till darkness fled before the coming light.  
The warm earth took him to her friendly breast,  
A cold, hard stone his ample pillow made.  
The night birds sang the traveller to rest.  
Angels of slumber gentle fingers laid  
Upon his brow, and Jacob fell asleep.

"Mummy", whispered Linnet one Sunday morning that winter. "Can I come into your bed?"

"Hop in then, dear. We have not had much chance for an early morning talk for weeks, have we?" Mrs Grey answered. "I have missed our talks, too. Have you?"

"You never will know how much, Mummy. It was nice having the baby here and Beverly was a darling, but I hated not having our Sunday mornings together."

She cuddled close to Mother and said "Mummy, I had the very nicest dream. It was so nice I hated to wake up. I thought you and I were in the most beautiful garden together. Mummy, dreams do not mean anything now, do they?"

"No, my darling. God has ceased to talk to men by dreams, for sometimes people imagined their dreams had a meaning and did things that were wrong and foolish. In the olden days when the people had not all the wonderful helps to understand God's wishes that people now have, God used to send them messages that way at times. Do you remember the wonderful dream that Jacob had?"

"I seem to remember that he did have a nice dream that had a meaning but I cannot remember what it was. Tell me about it, Mummy. It is not time for the others to wake up yet."

"Very well, I will dear. You see, Jacob had offended his brother, Esau, and was afraid his brother would kill him, so his parents had decided it would be best if he were to go away for a while till Esau cooled off. You know there were no cars or trains in those days so Jacob started out to walk to Haran, where Isaac's cousins lived and where Rebekah had lived so long."

"Why did he not go on a camel, Mummy? Isaac was rich, was he not?"

"Yes dear, but it may have been that they feared if he took a camel and appeared to be starting for a long journey, Esau, who was so angry, might try and stop him. Isaac was rich enough to have sent a whole caravan and presents to his relatives, if he had wished. Then Jacob may have felt that he would rather start out as a poor man and make his own way, for while everything would be his as the oldest son when Isaac died, he may have preferred to see what God would do for him and to see if he really had God's blessing or not. You see, when we do a mean trick and gain something by it, we never enjoy the fruits of our meanness. Perhaps Jacob rather felt God could not have much use for him after what he had done. At any rate, it seems that Jacob walked and just took some food and water for his journey which would take several days. Esau, seeing him start out like that, would never guess he was not coming back in a few days

at most. Jacob walked and walked. He started out in the morning and he walked till dark. A good walker could do about thirty miles in that time, and Jacob was a good walker.”

“Where did he go for the night, Mummy?”

“He just took his warm cloak and wrapped it round him and lay down on the ground with a stone for a pillow, Linnet. People often slept outside like that when they were watching over the sheep. He did not mind. He soon fell fast asleep for the night was warm, and after a while he had a wonderful dream. He thought he was awake and that there was a ladder right from the place where he was lying, up and up till it seemed to go right up among the stars. At the top of the ladder he could see a great white throne, and sitting on the throne was God. There were a great many angels round the throne and other angels were coming down the ladder to the earth, and still more were coming from the earth and going up the ladder. Then it seemed to Jacob that God looked right down and saw him lying there and stood up and said, ‘Jacob, I am the God of your fathers, Abraham and Isaac. I am going to give the land where you are lying to you and to your descendants after you, and your descendants shall be like the dust of the earth, and in you and your race shall all the families of the earth be blessed. And I will be with you and keep you wherever you go and will bring you back safely to this land, for I will never leave you till I have fulfilled my promise to you.’”

“That was the same promise He gave Abraham and Isaac, was it not, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear, but there was a little difference. God said to Abraham that his seed *‘should be as the stars of heaven and as the sand of the sea’*, but to Jacob He said *‘as the dust of the earth.’* Abraham had pictured God and Sarah the great covenant or promise of *‘the Seed of the woman’*, and the seed pictured by the *‘stars of heaven’* was Jesus and the true Church, while the *‘sand of the sea’* pictured the Jewish people first and then the whole human race restored and blessed by the Kingdom. The seed promised Jacob was to be *‘as the dust of the earth’* or an earthly race that would spread through the earth. Jacob did not picture God but the earthly seed, so the promise of the heavenly Kingdom was not given to him.”

“What did Jacob’s dream mean, Mummy? You said it had a meaning.”

“It was a picture of the earth during the Kingdom of Christ. Jesus Himself gave us the key to the understanding of Jacob’s dream when He said *‘Hereafter ye shall see the angels of heaven ascending and descending upon the Son of Man.’* He meant that He was the one pictured by the ladder in Jacob’s dream who would form a means of getting in touch with God again, not that He would be a real **ladder** but that by His sacrifice in dying for Adam, a means of speaking to God would be opened, and those who believed in Him could send messages to God by prayer and receive messages from God through His messengers or angels. During the years since Jesus first came, all true Christians have been able to reach God through Jesus.”

“Is that why we always say ‘For Jesus’ sake’ at the close of our prayers, Mummy?”

“Yes dear, that is the reason. *‘No man cometh unto the Father but by Him’*. The picture, however, was really of the Millennial Age when the ladder will be opened up to all the world. Then the people who were faithful to God in the days before Jesus paid the ransom for Adam will be the rulers of the earth for they will be raised from the dead as

perfect human beings, and God's Word says *'Instead of thy fathers, (they) shall be thy children whom thou shalt make rulers (princes) in all the earth.'*"

"Why does it say *'instead of thy fathers'* Mummy?"

"Because they were Jesus' ancestors, for Jesus was born of the Jewish people and was a direct descendant of Noah, Abraham and Isaac, dear. In those days they spoke of ancestors as fathers – that is those through whom they got their life. So the faithful people of the Jewish race are to be raised and Jesus will be the one who will give them life, so He will be called their Father, and He will make them rulers over all the earth. Because they have been faithful and true to God no matter what it cost and have served Him truly, God will be in touch with them all the time through His Church and they will do whatever God tells them."

"But, Mummy, we call God our Father and you sometimes speak of Jesus as our elder Brother. Should we not call Jesus our Father?"

"In the Kingdom, Linnet, Jesus will be the Father of all the people of earth for, when He commences to rule over the earth, the life of the people will come **from** God but **through** Jesus. It is by giving up our right to earth and turning to serve God that we really become God's children. You are God's child in a special way, for when you were dying and the doctors could do nothing for you, Daddy and I gave you to God and He gave you back your life. That is why you should seek to be so very much better than the other children around you. They will all be Jesus' children in the Kingdom and they will obey His laws and have His blessing, but you are God's child **now**."

"It is wonderful to be His little girl, Mummy, and I want to learn all I can about Him. What were those verses you read to me one night, Mummy? 'I'm the child of a King'"

"You mean the poem that says,

Tho' here on the earth as a stranger I roam  
In spirit I'm oft with my Father at home  
In the midst of life's trials, in rapture I sing  
'All glory to God, I'm the child of a king.'"

"Yes, that is it, Mummy. I would like to learn that poem."

"You shall, dear, and when you can remember a tune really well I will teach you one to sing the verses too. Then when things seem to be going wrong you can sing them and you will find great comfort in remembering that you are indeed God's child."

"I guess that dream made Jacob feel better about having to leave his home, Mummy."

"Yes, dear. He wakened up then and the memory of that wonderful dream and of God's words were like a song in his heart. He found it was getting light and he set about gathering stones which he made into an altar to mark the place by, for he said *'How wonderful is this place, it is none other than the house of God and the gateway into heaven.'* On the top of the altar he set the stone he had used for a pillow and he set it upright like a pillar and poured oil from his flask on it as an offering to God. He named the place 'Bethel.' There Jacob knelt and made a vow to God, saying 'If Thou, Oh God, will really be with me and help me and keep me in the way I go and give me food to eat

and clothing to wear and bring me back here again so that I may go to my father's house in peace, this stone which I have set here for a pillar shall be God's house to me, and of all that I gain I will give one tenth to Thee.'

"Then Jacob got up and ate some of the food he had brought, and started again on his journey to Haran. He had been some days on his journey when he came to a field and crossed it. In the field he saw three large flocks of sheep with their shepherds gathered around a well. He went over to the well and said to the shepherds, 'Well met, brothers, where do you come from?' He was so glad to see anyone he could talk to and was glad when they understood his words for they spoke his own language.

"They answered, 'We come from Haran'

"Do you know Laban?' Jacob asked, and they said 'Yes, we know him.'

"Is he well?' Jacob inquired. 'Yes he is well, and you see that lock of sheep coming to the well? That is his flock and his daughter, Rachel, is bringing them to water.'

"Now Jacob had been a shepherd all his life and he knew that it was not good for sheep to be kept standing around for hours waiting for a drink. They should be allowed to feed till evening and then taken to water. If they become thirsty during the day they should be given a drink at once and then allowed to feed all afternoon. So he said 'It is too early to bring the flocks in. Why do you not water them at once and take them back for another feed?'

"We cannot do that. We have to bring all the sheep here and then, when they are all gathered, the men who keep the well come and take the stone away and we water our sheep.'

"You will never have healthy sheep that way', Jacob answered, and when Rachel came to the well he rolled the stone away and gave her sheep a drink himself. Rachel said 'Who are you that you are willing to do this for me?' 'I am your cousin, Jacob, the son of Rebekah', Jacob answered and kissed her. They took the sheep back to pasture together and then Rachel ran to her home and told her father, who was Rebekah's brother, Laban. He ran to meet Jacob and welcomed him to their home. He said 'You are one of my family. Stay here and live with us, and you shall be as a son to me.'

"I will be glad to live with you till Esau gets over his anger, but I will work for you to pay for my board', said Jacob.

"Because you are of my family does not make it right that you should work for me for nothing. What wages would you ask?' Laban asked. Now Jacob loved Rachel the moment he saw her and he knew she was of his mother's family and not a heathen, and what was more, she was very beautiful, so he said 'I will work for you for seven years if you will give me my food and clothing and your daughter, Rachel, for my wife.'

"Laban said 'That pleases me well, for I do not wish to give Rachel to a stranger. Stay with us and it shall be as you ask.'"

"But Mummy, why did Jacob have to work so long for Rachel? Why did he not just marry her right away when he liked her so well?"



“Things were very different in those days, dear. A girl was considered to be the property of her parents, and the man who wished to marry her must give money or rich gifts in exchange for her. Women did not work and earn money as they do now, nor were they allowed to decide whom they wished to marry. Jacob could have sent back to his father and got money or stock to trade for Rachel, but he wished to earn his own way and see what he could do for himself. Having no money or rich jewels to trade for a wife, Jacob felt that he would like to earn the wife he wished by his own endeavour.”

“Did he get her, Mummy?”

“After many days”, Mother laughed. “Jacob worked the whole seven years and God blessed him as He had promised so that everything he did turned out well. He was a good worker and would not let Laban’s sheep stand for hours waiting for water. The sheep grew fat and healthy, and Laban was getting quite rich through the blessing of God. The seven years passed quickly and Jacob could hardly wait for the day when Rachel would be his wife. Now Rachel had an older sister. Her name was Leah, and she was not beautiful but she was very kind and gentle. Jacob liked her as a sister but he did not love her. The day came when Jacob and Rachel were to be married. In those days a girl was covered with a veil when she was married to a man and the ceremony was very simple. Laban gave a great feast and invited many guests, and after the feast he brought Jacob’s bride to him and gave her to him before the guests to be his wife. It was not till the next morning that he found out that he had married not Rachel, as he thought, but Leah, her older sister. Jacob was very angry and went to Laban and said, ‘What have you done? Did I not agree to work for you for seven years for Rachel, and you have deceived me and given me Leah.’

“Laban replied, ‘There is a custom in this country that a younger sister may not be given in marriage before her older sister. I thought when I made that bargain with you that Leah would surely be married before the seven years was up. That is why I had to give you Leah first. Now if you will take her as your wife and treat her well, in a week I will give you Rachel also. Then you shall work for me for another seven years for Rachel but I will not ask you to wait that long for her.’ So Jacob got two wives instead of one, but he had to work another seven years.”

“I don’t think Laban was very nice to treat Jacob like that, Mummy. Do you?”

“Laban was a very selfish man, I think. He had not been getting along very well when Jacob came and then everything seemed to change and he realised that God was blessing him because of Jacob. People today would say that Jacob brought him luck.”

“Would not God bless Laban anyway, Mummy? He was true to God, was he not?”

“Not as true as he might have been, Linnet. All Abraham’s family knew that God had called Abraham to Canaan and had promised to bless him if he obeyed. Lot had believed that promise and had chosen to go with Abraham, hoping to share the blessing, and he had shared it until he left Abraham and went to Sodom when trouble had come to him. Nahor, Abraham’s brother, had chosen to remain in Haran and so did not have the blessing of God. He had to work hard for everything he got and he had finally followed the custom of the country and had set up idols in his home. These little idols were supposed to bring good luck to those who had them in their homes and set out offerings

for them. The Chinese still have their household gods and when they wish a good crop they set out dishes of rice and grain for them.”

“But they cannot eat them, Mummy, can they?” Linnet asked.

“No dear, but the field mice eat the grain and they try to believe the god ate it and will bless them. If they have good crops they give offerings to the gods, but if the crop is poor they will sometimes beat their god. Because Laban had these idols God would not bless him so he had been poor till Jacob came. Now he did not want Jacob to go away, so he made him work seven years more for Rachel.”

“Did they have any little children, Mummy?”

“Yes dear. Before a year had passed Leah had a son. Leah was the first wife and as such she had the chief place in Jacob's house. At first Rachel did not mind for she knew Jacob loved her best. Now Leah had a baby boy and Jacob was very proud of him. They called him Reuben. The baby was a bond between Jacob and Leah. He felt more kindly toward her, but he hoped Rachel would have a little boy too. None came, however, and when Reuben was about two Leah had another little son. She said, ‘God has given me another little boy because He knew Jacob does not love me.’ In those days it meant a lot to have boys to help with the work, and Jacob was greatly pleased when a third son was born, and then a fourth. Rachel was very sad, however. She felt left out of everything. When Levi was born it was bad enough, but when Judah came and Leah said ‘I will praise the Lord for He has given me another son’, Rachel felt she could not stand another thing. Perhaps Jacob tried to comfort her by reminding her how Sarah had to wait so many years for Isaac and how she had grown so discouraged she had finally given Hagar to Abraham as a wife, and Ishmael was born, but God had not forgotten His promise, and Isaac came at last. Rachel thought much about this and finally she came to Jacob and brought her maid to him, asking him to take her as his wife. The maid's children would be counted as hers since the maid was her slave.”

“Mummy, what was a slave?”

“A slave was a person whom you bought to work for you. They were counted as much yours as a cow, or horse, or dog, you bought. You did not have to pay them for working for you and you could do what you pleased with them. Every well-born woman had a slave to take care of her. You had to give them food and clothes but it was often the food you did not want. A slave was often treated very badly, worse than you would treat a dog. A slave woman who had a kind mistress thought herself very well off indeed. She could not leave her mistress' home without permission unless she was sold to someone else, and if she was cross or lazy her mistress could have her whipped or sold. If a slave had children they became the property of her mistress. Thankfully, things are different today.”

“Now, little one, I am afraid we will have to leave our story there for I hear Daddy moving about. Tomorrow, or maybe tonight, I will tell you more about Jacob and his family. What do you say if we have a race and see who can get dressed first.”

“All right, Mummy. It's fun to have a race with you but don't you start till I get my clothes”, Linnet laughed and ran off to get her things, and a merry time ensued, while the race

ended in a tie, and Mother was breathless and laughing as with arms about each other they went to the kitchen to prepare breakfast.

"I wish all my little friends could have a Mummy like mine", said Linnet. "That would never do", Mother laughed, "for you see all mothers have not got a little girl like mine."

## Chapter 11: Returning Home

"Behold I am with thee and will keep thee in all places whither thou goest and will bring thee again into this land, for I will not leave thee until I have done all that I have spoken to thee of."

Genesis 28:15

Sunday evening came at last. The day had been spent by Linnet and her friends in quiet play. In the afternoon there had been a trip out into the country and a quiet hour close to nature and nature's God, for the day was exceptionally fine for autumn. Then, after the dinner things were cleared away, there was an hour's study of God's Word. Linnet loved to share these studies and was becoming quite proficient in looking up Scripture passages and reading them with Mother's assistance or with Daddy's. The studies were attended by very few except the family and were sometimes informal, though always reverential. Tonight, however, Mother noticed that her little girl's eyes were getting heavy. The ride in the fresh air had left her drowsy, so Mrs Grey drew her close and whispered, "Better slip away and get ready for bed, dear. I will come up when the study is over. You are too weary to stay up any longer."

So Linnet kissed her Mother and Daddy and slipped away. She did not sleep, however, for her mind was still too active for slumber, but she lay resting and thinking and as soon as she heard the door close on the last of the little group, Linnet called from the head of the stairs, "Are you coming up, Mummy? I am waiting for you."

"Bless your heart, I thought you would be fast asleep long ago. I will be there in a minute, dear."

"Mummy, you know that verse I read for you tonight, 'Remember the Sabbath day to keep it holy'? Is it wrong to play on Sunday, Mummy? Susie Jones' mother says it is very wicked and she won't let Susie ever play with us. We never play noisy games."

"Darling, the Bible nowhere says 'In it thou shalt not play.' It says *'Thou shalt do no work.'* However, dear, I have explained to you before that we are not Jews and that Law was not given to us. In addition, it was the seventh day that was to be kept and not the first, but that law, like all the Commandments, was given to the Jews. How many days in the week do you think we should serve God and worship Him, Linnet?"

"Every day, Mummy."

"Yes, my darling. The Jews were God's servants and were under orders or laws which they must obey. We are God's children and do His will, not because we are forced to but because He is our Father and we love Him. We will not give Him one day's service in the week and do as we please the other six. Each day we will try to please Him in all our ways. The law about taking one day's rest in seven was a picture of the coming Kingdom when all men will rest from the care and labour and trouble of the six thousand years of

Satan's rule, and it was given because God, who made us, knew that people could not keep on working all the time without a rest. He knew we would have to have a rest once in seven days. So on the Sunday we take a day to just do as little as we have to and to try and get a little more time for study. Like all God's laws, it is a wise one and we honour Him for it and try to please Him. Play is your means of rest and a change from the work of school. It is best to play quietly so as not to annoy others who wish to rest. We would not steal or kill or break any of God's other laws, not because they are forced upon us but because it would displease Him and we do not wish to do that."

"I see, Mummy. I just wondered. Mummy, you said this morning that you would tell me about the rest of Jacob's family. There were Leah's four sons; did Jacob have any more?"

"Yes, dear. I told you how Rachel gave him her maid to be his wife, hoping she might have a son and Rachel could count it as hers and care for it and love it as her own. Her wish was granted for Bilhah had a son. Rachel was very happy. She said, 'God has heard me and has given me a son.' She called the little fellow Dan, and cared for him as her own. After a year or two Bilhah had another little boy, and they called him Naphtali. Then Leah felt that Rachel was regaining Jacob's love and she wished to do something to gain his attention. Her four sons were growing older now and she had no more, so she gave her maid to Jacob also, and this maid, Zilpah, also had two sons."

"My, what a big family, Mummy!"

"I guess Leah thought so too, dear, for she called the first one Gad, which means 'a troop is coming', and the second Asher, which means 'blessed' or happy. But that was not all Jacob's family for after that Leah had two more boys and a little daughter whom she named Dinah. Then something happened that made both Jacob and Rachel very happy. Rachel had a little son of her own. He was very precious to her, for she had waited for many years for him. They called the little boy Joseph. Now you see there were eleven little boys in Jacob's family and the oldest would be about ten or twelve years old, so they would have a great time looking after them all. After Joseph was born, Jacob went to Laban and said, 'I want to go back to my own country and see my father again. I have worked for over fourteen years for you. Let me take my wives and children and go, for you know I have served you well for all these years.' But Laban said, 'Do not go yet, Jacob. I will pay you well to stay and work for me.'

"Jacob said 'You had very little when I came to you. Now, through the blessing of God, you are rich. Now I must provide for my own family.'

"What do you want me to give you?" Laban asked.

"Let me feed and care for your flocks and herds still, but I will separate all the spotted and striped animals from the herd and set them aside, and I will take the plain coloured animals and keep them separate. Then all the striped and spotted animals that are born to the plain coloured herds shall be mine, and they will be my wages.' Laban thought that was a good plan. He felt sure that plain coloured cattle would have plain coloured calves and they would all be his. So he agreed to the plan. His sons took all the striped and spotted cattle away and looked after them, but God was watching over Jacob's interests and most of the young animals born were spotted or striped. Now Laban had lots of cattle but he was a greedy man and when he came to see Jacob's herds of young

cattle and saw how few plain coloured ones there were, he was angry and said 'You have far more young cattle than I have. It just seems as if every animal is born with stripes or spots.' Jacob answered, 'Well then, if you think I am getting the best of it, you may change and next year I will take the plain coloured ones.'

"The next year the young animals were mostly plain coloured and Jacob got the most again. Laban changed Jacob's wages ten times in the years that followed but always Jacob got the most animals for his herds. That was because God was blessing Jacob and not Laban, for Laban was not true to God."

"I should think Laban would soon see that it was better to serve God and not those silly old idols, Mummy."

"I guess he was really just too stubborn to give in and admit he was wrong, Linnet. Before long Jacob's herds and flocks were immense. Everything he did seemed to prosper. If anyone tried to get the better of him in a trade, Jacob always came out on top. Soon he had to have servants to look after his animals. He would buy slaves to do the work for him, and as he treated them well, they liked him and were faithful. Before many years had passed Jacob was a rich man, but he knew that Laban and his sons were jealous. They were not doing so well themselves but they would not give God the credit and turn back to serve Him.

"Jacob saw how they felt and he decided that the best thing he could do would be to go back to Canaan. He knew that Laban would try to stop him and he did not wish to have any trouble with his wives' father, so he called his wives and said to them, 'I can see that your father is not well pleased with me. He realises that God is with me but he is jealous of my success. You both know how well I have served him yet he has changed my wages ten times in the past few years hoping to get the better of me. First he said I should have all the spotted and striped animals, then the plain coloured ones, and so on. Now I feel that it would be much better for us to take the boys and all our possessions and go back to the land of Canaan before we have trouble with your father. What do you say?'

"Leah and Rachel answered, 'You have always been good to us and we are yours. Our father sold us to you and tried to cheat you even then, and if we were to stay with him we would never get anything for all he has will go to his sons. Your God has blessed us and has given us riches in spite of him. Whatever your God wishes you to do you must do, and we will go with you wherever you go.'

"So, while Laban and his sons were away looking after their herds and shearing their sheep, Jacob and his servants gathered up all their own goods and started out for Canaan."

"Did they not tell Laban they were going, Mummy?"

"No, dear. They felt sure that he would make trouble and be very unpleasant so they just left and were gone three days before someone told Laban. He was as angry as Jacob had felt he would be, and gathered his sons and servants and started out to try and make them go back, but God's angel met him and warned him not to interfere with Jacob, so when he caught up to them he pretended that he had only wanted to say goodbye to them all, and they had a feast together. Laban, however, claimed that they

had stolen his gods. Jacob told him to search the whole camp and see if he could find anything there that belonged to him. Laban searched everywhere but could not find his idols.”

“Jacob had not taken them, had he, Mummy?”

“No dear, but Rachel had. She may have felt that it was because of them that God was displeased with her father, or she may have liked them. I think it was more likely to stop her father putting his trust in gods of wood and stone. She hid them, and Laban could not find them. Jacob had no idea Rachel had them. Laban said goodbye to them there and he and Jacob built an altar and a pillar there and called the place Mizpah, which means ‘God watch between us.’ They promised never to pass that pillar to harm each other. Then Laban went back home and Jacob and his family went on toward Canaan. They travelled very slowly so that the sheep and herds could feed as they went. On the way Jacob saw a vision of angels and this assured him that God was still guarding him. Jacob had often felt ashamed of the way he had treated Esau, and as he thought of God’s goodness and blessing to him, he felt still more ashamed, so he made up his mind to send Esau a fine present.

“He went through his herds and flocks and chose some of the very finest animals and set them aside for a present to Esau. About that time he heard that Esau was coming to meet him. Jacob was afraid, but he sent his servants on ahead with the present he had prepared; there were four hundred sheep and goats, thirty camels with their foals, and forty cows, and twenty asses. These Jacob arranged in bands and told the servants in charge to go ahead and present them to Esau. Then, having done all he could to make peace, Jacob divided all the rest of his stock into two bands and sent them ahead by different routes, hoping one at least would get through safely even if Esau did fight. Then he decided to pray quietly to God for help in case Esau was still angry. That evening he sent the rest of his band across a small river and stayed alone to talk to God. Soon he realised that he was not alone. He could feel the presence of some other person but it was hard to see anyone in the darkness. At least he could make out the figure of a man and, fearing it was a messenger sent by Esau against him, Jacob caught hold of the stranger.

“The man struggled with him and they wrestled together, each one trying to get control of the other. Jacob was a very strong man but he could not hold this stranger. All night they wrestled but neither seemed to gain an advantage. Then, just as it was getting light the stranger touched the hollow of Jacob’s thigh and put his thigh out of joint. Still Jacob would not give in but held onto him with all his strength for he felt that it was not a man after all but an angel.

“‘It is morning, let me go’, said the stranger. But Jacob said, ‘I will not let you go unless you give me a blessing.’”

“He could not hold an angel against his will, could he, Mummy?”

“Not if the angel really wished to get away, dear. The angel could just disappear. Indeed, he could have killed Jacob with a touch, and it was to show him how easily he could defeat him if he wished that the angel put Jacob’s thigh out of joint. The angel was just obeying orders from God, and now he said ‘*What is your name?*’

“Jacob answered, ‘I am Jacob.’ Then the angel said, ‘*You will be called Israel from now on because you have power with God and with men as a great prince.*’

“Then Jacob asked, ‘What is your name?’ The angel said ‘*Why do you ask my name?*’ Then he gave Jacob God’s blessing and disappeared. Jacob knew now that he had been struggling with an angel of God and he said ‘This place shall be called Peniel, for I have seen the angel of God face to face and have lived.’ Then he went across the river, but he was lame, for the cord in his leg had shrunk where the angel touched it.

“Scarcely had Jacob rejoined his band when he saw Esau coming with four hundred men. He told each of his wives to guard her own children, and left them with the servants and went to meet his brother.”

“Was Esau still angry, Mummy?”

“No, Linnet. Esau had had plenty of time to get over his anger. He had become quite rich himself and Isaac’s wealth did not mean as much to him as it once had. He had missed his brother, too, and like many another person who thinks they hate a brother, he had found that he did not really hate Jacob at all. Now he ran to meet him and kissed him. Jacob was so glad to see his brother and to find that the enmity of youth was all gone, that he cried. Then Jacob took Esau to meet his wives and children. Esau said ‘Why did you send all those presents to me, Jacob? I have all I want, my brother. Keep them for your own.’ But Jacob answered ‘No, Esau, please take them as a gift from me. I have seen you again and that is enough. Take then my present and my blessing, for God has been very good to me.’ So when Esau saw Jacob would be hurt if he refused his gift, he agreed. He said ‘Come, let us travel on together’, but Jacob said ‘The children are still very young and cannot travel fast, and if we were to drive the herds too fast they would die. You have your camels and can travel swiftly. Go on ahead, Esau, and I will come slowly and meet you in Mount Seir.’”

“Esau must have been a pretty nice man after all, Mummy.”

“All men have some good in them, dear. Esau had grown older and more kind with the years. Jacob travelled slowly through the country and lived much as Abraham had. He built a house in a place called Succoth, but he liked the free, roaming life better and did not stay there long. After awhile he went to visit Isaac who was still alive. It was likely at that time that Isaac gave him the tablet of his life and the tablets of their family which he had kept. Isaac had added a short note to the tablet of Abraham and Ishmael. Now Jacob and Esau added their story to the record and signed it. The signature of Esau is in verse 1 of Genesis 36, and Jacob’s in the second verse of Genesis 37. The tablet was written and completed at the death of Isaac, who lived to be one hundred and eighty years old and was buried by his two sons, Jacob and Esau.

“Now, my darling, it is time you went to sleep. I have completed the story of Jacob and Esau, the two twin boys, and our next story will be about one of Jacob’s boys.”

“But, Mummy, you did not tell me if the story of Jacob and Esau was all a picture or what it meant”, Linnet protested. She hated to let Mother go.

“Well, dear, I told you who the boys pictured in another story. In this picture, however, Jacob was the one who counted, for God had chosen him for His blessing and was now

using him for His pictures. Jacob now pictured Jesus and the true Church at times and at other times Jesus only. His wives, Rachel and Leah, were pictures of 'the two houses of Israel', that is, the Jewish people or earthly seed were pictured by Leah. She had many sons, picturing the fact that the Jewish race had God's favour first and grew great and fruitful. Rachel pictured the Church of the Gospel Age, 'the spiritual seed'. As she was always the one Jacob loved, so it was the true Church Jesus loved best, though He had the Jewish nation first. Jacob's name was changed to Israel, meaning 'a prince of God' or 'mighty with God'. So Jesus has, as the Bible tells us, '*attained a greater name*' and will be the True Prince of God. Jacob waited many years before Rachel's first son, Joseph, was born and Jesus waits many years before the true Church is complete. I think that is really all we can be sure of in the picture of Jacob, dear one. Now you must turn over and go to sleep. Goodnight, dear. Sweet dreams."

## Chapter 12: Joseph and his Brethren

Last night, as I sat in the gloaming – my Bible upon my knee  
I read in its time-worn pages the annals of history.  
Before me there rose a picture of a race stubborn and strong,  
Whose history darkened the pages as a baritone deepens a song.  
Like a mural outspread before me in scenes from the halls of time;  
In the first scene a stalwart figure of a young lad, true and fine.  
He stood there wrapped in a shepherd's cloak – in colours bright and clear.  
His dream-filled eyes were lifted to the Heavens. He seemed to hear  
The voice of destiny calling him to a place in the hall of fame.  
He could not see that the pathway led through a valley of grief and pain.

I saw him again with his brethren, far out in the wilderness –  
I felt their jealous hatred and the young lad's deep distress.  
He lay there bound and helpless, in a dark and slimy pit,  
And the vultures of death were wheeling over the brink of it.  
Drawn from its chill and terror, sold as a helpless slave,  
His brethren counted their profits – the wages of rogue and knave.  
I heard his pleas for mercy – but his cries were all in vain,  
His brethren dipped his garments in the blood of a lamb they'd slain.

I gaze on the lovely mural, but before my wondering eyes  
It seems to undergo a change that fills me with surprise.  
Transposed for the figure of Joseph, I see another form,  
More beautiful and comely, more filled with grace and charm  
Instead of a simple, shepherd boy, a carpenter I see  
Who looks out over the rolling hills and the plains of Galilee.  
The voice of destiny calls Him too, to a place in the hall of fame,  
But the deep, dark valley lies between – the valley of grief and shame.

Then – in the garden kneeling – in bitter grief and stress  
While His brethren plot against Him, like those in the wilderness.  
I see HIM bound and tortured, stretched on a cruel cross  
While pious priests count their profits nor mourn their brother's loss.  
For twenty pieces of silver was Joseph – the young lad – sold  
But the priests of the sacred Temple hoarded their precious gold  
While they bargained with Judas for thirty – the price of an adult slave.  
With the cost of His blood they purchased a field for the pauper's grave.



"Why, whatever can be the matter with my little girl?" Mrs Grey stooped over a little figure that was shaken by sobs. She had just returned from an afternoon spent at the home of a neighbour where she had been trying to show some of the glories of the Plan of God for mankind to a small group of interested women, whom she hoped to lead to a deeper study of God's Word and of His plan for the government of the world when the times are ripe for it. She was grieved to find her usually cheerful little girl in tears.

"Oh, Mummy! What makes Buddy hate me so? He is so mean to me", Linnet sobbed with her head on Mother's shoulder. Her eyes were red and swollen from the tears that stained her flushed cheeks. Mother held her close and answered, "Buddy does not hate you, Linnet. He really loves you. Perhaps you did something that made him cross. I know he is not always as thoughtful as he might be, but Buddy is older and does not always understand his little sister."

"But, Mummy, Sandy is never mean to me. I guess I did make Buddy cross for I did tease him a little, but not enough to make him so angry", Linnet confessed. "It was only in fun, anyway."

"Perhaps Buddy's tooth was aching, you know when you have a toothache nothing ever seems very funny", Mother said, holding her little girl close till the sobs had died away. These complaints of Buddy's unkindness were becoming too frequent. She had taken him to task over it but it seemed to do more harm than good. Mrs Grey knew very well where the trouble lay but had tried to avoid explanations, hoping that the difficulty would adjust itself in time, but she had seen that, of late, a spirit of bitterness was growing that might, if continued, lead to serious trouble. Now she felt that she must try a different method. She spoke quietly –

"Linnet, darling, I think perhaps if you could understand the real cause of the trouble between you and your brother, you might be able to do more than anyone else to set things right. Let me explain. When you came to us Buddy was just the same age as you are now, and you were a great disappointment to him and a trial as well. When I speak to him about his treatment of you, it increases his resentment toward you."

"How was I a disappointment to him, Mummy?" Linnet looked her mother in wonder. She had not thought that there might be a reason for her older brother's unkindness, outside his own ill nature.

"Mother will try and show you Buddy's point of view", Mrs Grey answered. "First, however, let me take off my coat and hat and put them away." Then she seated herself in the rocker and drew Linnet to her knee as she continued. "You are always wishing for a little sister, Linnet. Suppose I were to tell you that there was a chance of you having one, what would you think?"

"Oh, Mummy! Is there? I would be so glad." Her grief was all forgotten in a moment.

"Now, my darling, do not be so quick to jump at conclusions", Mother laughed. "We have talked that matter over before and I have explained why it is impossible. I was just trying to show you how it was with Buddy. You know when we get to see the other people's point of view it helps us to understand them. For years your brother had longed for a little

playmate, just as you have. Sandy was much older and not a real companion for a little boy, and the girls had no patience with him. Buddy coaxed and begged for a little brother. Then came the time that you were coming to us but we did not know that you were going to be a sweet, frail little girl. When I told Buddy that a baby was coming he cried 'Oh, Mummy, I have been asking God to send me a baby brother and now He is going to give me one. I will be so good to him and we will have so much fun together.'

"I said 'But dear, it may be a little sister. Will you love her and be good to her?'

"I do not want another sister. Girls are never any fun. I want my little brother', Buddy answered. Well dear, I hoped you would be a little boy for Buddy's sake for he was lonesome but I felt sure that even if you were a little girl he would soon grow to love you anyway. I tried to prepare him and show him that God does not always give us what we ask for but what will be best for us. Buddy, however, was sure in his heart that God had heard his prayer and was going to send a little brother. Then you came, and he was terribly disappointed."

"Oh, Mummy! I did not know! Poor Buddy!" Linnet exclaimed. "I know how he must have felt for I want a sister, so. No wonder he did not like me."

"Buddy would have come to love you very much, dear one, if you had only been a strong, healthy little girl. You were a very sick baby and for months we did not dare to let anyone hold you or play with you. Buddy could not even take you in his arms. He could not play with you, and to make things worse he could not play around the house as he had been accustomed to. You had to have such special care, and everyone went on tiptoe to avoid disturbing you. Then, when Buddy would try to caress you in his clumsy way, he would hurt you and he was scolded for it. Daddy loved you so much that he would not let anyone touch you for fear you would get worse. The girls loved you and guarded you, but they did not understand a lonely, disappointed little boy. I could not give Buddy the attention that would have eased his trouble, however, for I was not very well either and so Buddy soon came to blame you for everything. Then, as you grew older, you found that you had only to cry to bring someone running, and Buddy was often scolded for hurting you when he had not even touched you. These things made him very bitter."

"Sandy loved me though, Mummy."

"Sandy was grown up and he understood that you had to have the special care we gave you. He was old enough to help guard you, and so he grew to love you dearly, but you became rather spoiled before our Heavenly Father restored your health. Buddy was just a lonely disappointed little fellow who felt that he had lost his place because of you. Now, dear, do you see why you should do everything you can to help and please Buddy and win his love? Buddy is a very find boy and you can win his love if you try. Never tell tales on him that will cause him trouble. Help him with little things, and when he asks you to do anything, do it pleasantly. He may only growl at first, but you will soon find that he is really a fine Buddy."

"I can't see why God let him be so disappointed, Mummy."

"Our Heavenly Father knows the things we need to make us fine, dear. You have a chance to prove what a good girl you can be. Winning Buddy's love will be a really

worthwhile task. It will help Buddy to be more patient. If God had not seen that a little sister would be the best for him He would not have sent you. There is another thing, too, that has made things hard to Buddy. When he was little we were having a pretty hard struggle to get the things that were really necessary, and Buddy never had the nice things you get. The girls were younger and had no money to buy things for him as they do for you, and when Buddy saw you get things he had been denied when he was little, it made him jealous. He is growing up, and with a little help from you will get over his dislike.”

“I am glad you told me that, Mummy. I can see how Buddy feels and I am going to try and win his love. The first thing I am going to do is to and give him one of my chocolates and tell him I am sorry I teased him”, Linnet said, slipping down from her mother’s knee.

“That is my fine girl. I must go and get dinner ready for Dad and the boys, and when we get everything cleared away after supper I will tell you about a little boy who had a harder problem than yours and how God trained him for a great work. Daddy has to go back to work tonight and the boys are going out, so we can have a nice long talk.”

“Do you really think that God may be training me for some work too, Mummy?”

“I am sure of it, dear. Everyone who gives his life to God and tries to do His will is put through a special course of training, and Paul said *‘No training for the present seems to be joyous, but grievous, but afterwards it yieldeth the peaceful fruits of righteousness to those who are rightly exercised by it.’*”

“What did he mean, Mummy?”

“That God’s training is like going to school, Linnet. It is not all pleasant, and we must pay for our mistakes, but if we really try to learn our lessons we will grow up to be the kind of people God can use, and will show the fruits of character that will be pleasing to Him. If we learn our lessons well, God will reward us for it.”

Dinner was over and the dishes all washed and put away and Mrs Grey and Linnet had the house to themselves. Linnet brought her doll and seated herself at mother’s knee. “No, Mummy, how about that story?”

“All ready, dear? I can tell you while I am mending these socks. Would you not like to bring your fancy work?”

“I can listen better without it, Mummy, and my baby wants to be cuddled tonight”, Linnet answered.

“We cannot tell the whole story in one evening, dear, for it is a long story but we can have part of it. This is the whole story of a man’s life and it is one of the finest of God’s pictures – indeed, it is a whole book of pictures”, Mother answered.

“First, Mummy, I want to tell you that your plan worked fine. I gave Buddy one of my chocolates and told him I was sorry and he put his arm around me and said ‘I am sorry I was so cross too, little sister.’ Gee, Mummy, it may be so happy.”

“Good for you, Linnet. You will find Buddy will do all kinds of nice things for you if you treat him that way. The little boy I was going to tell you of had a much harder problem, but he too learned that kindness and forgiveness are always the best ways of meeting unkindness. You know Jesus said ‘*Return good for evil*’ and ‘*Do to others what you wish them to do to you.*’ That is His golden rule.”

“Mummy, I heard a lady say to you one day that Jesus was not the first to give that rule. That she heard a man on the radio say it was a Chinaman. That was not true was it, Mummy?”

“No, dear. If you had listened to all we said you would know that there is a great difference between the rule Jesus gave and the rule of Confucius; the great Chinese who gave his people a very good rule. It has been said he gave the Chinese a brass rule but Jesus gave us a golden one.”

“What was the brass rule, Mummy?”

“It was ‘**Do not do** to others what you **do not wish** others to do to you.’”

“It is almost the same, is it not, Mummy?”

“At first glance, dear. Just so, brass looks very much like gold when it is brightly polished, but one is not so valuable and the other is very valuable. Now, suppose you and Jennie were going down town together and you had an apple and Jennie had a banana. You wanted a taste of the banana so much that your apple did not taste a bit nice. Jennie had bananas often and the banana did not appeal to her. She was wishing for a bite of your apple. If you obeyed the Chinese rule you would not snatch her banana from her because you would not like her to grab your apple. You would not fight. If you obeyed Jesus’ rule what would you do?”

“Give her part of my apple, Mummy, because I wished she would share her banana.”

“Now you see the difference between the rule of gold and the rule of brass. Jesus’ rule means you are always doing some kindness to others. The Chinese rule just means you are not harming others, but you need not be kind either.”

“Jesus’ rule would work out best too, Mummy. If I gave a share of my apple to Jennie, she would give me a share of her banana and then we’d both be happy. I see the difference. I am going to use Jesus’ rule.”

“You will find it is the best way, dear. Now for the story. I told you of the little boy who was born to Rachel. His parents called him Joseph and they loved him very dearly. The other boys were all older than Joseph. We do not know exactly how much older for we do not know how long Jacob worked for Laban after he paid for his two wives. The youngest of the boys was not much older than Joseph but the oldest may have been about twenty when Joseph was born.

“What made Joseph’s life more difficult was that there were four mothers in the camp and each one would naturally think her own boys the best, and she would take their part. In the Eastern families the first wife is the head of the household and she rules the whole family. Rachel, however, was Jacob’s favourite wife and that gave her a special place in

the household. A woman who has no children was looked upon as not having God's favour and all the other women who have children looked down upon her. Rachel had been very unhappy, even though she knew Jacob loved her the best, but now that she had a little boy of her own everything had changed. She really loved her older sister Leah, and the other two women were only slaves in the family, so Rachel now had a place of honour.

"Joseph was still very young when they left Laban and started out for Canaan. Now Jacob was working for himself and not for Laban and he could do what he pleased. His servants looked after things for him and he was able to take life much easier. He was able to spend more time with Joseph than he had with the other boys, and he made a pet of the little boy and gave him many nice things that he had not been able to give to the older boys.

"It was quite natural that the older boys should be jealous of Joseph, even if Jacob had not showed how fond he was of the little fellow. He was the son of the favourite wife, and as such he could not do anything wrong. Leah would naturally feel hurt when Jacob gave things the other boys had never had. So jealousy came into the camp when Joseph was born and jealousy can be a terrible thing."

"They must have felt about Joseph like you said Buddy used to feel about me, Mummy" Linnet suggested.

"Only far more so, dear. Things were not so bad while Rachel lived for she watched over Joseph, but when he was about ten or twelve years old Rachel had another little boy whom they named Benjamin. Rachel died when Benjamin was born. Now there was no one to take care of Joseph or take his part against the older boys, and they felt free to pick on him more than ever. Even Rachel's old nurse who had cared for Joseph as a little fellow and who loved him died about the same time. They were at the place where Jacob had that wonderful dream of the angels when Rachel and her nurse, Deborah, died and Jacob had a fine tomb built and buried them both there. He had Deborah buried under a fine old oak tree, right near the pillar, but they had started to travel on toward the place where Isaac was living when Rachel died, and Jacob buried her near what is now the City of Bethlehem. The tomb is still there.

"That was when Joseph's real troubles began. His brothers were all older and some were grown men and they hated to see the way Jacob turned to Joseph for comfort. He had loved Rachel so well that he was terribly sad and lonely without her, and Joseph seemed so much like her. Jacob wanted the boy always with him. The older boys felt left out, I guess, and everything made them hate Joseph more."

"Did they really hate him, Mummy?"

"Well, I think Linnet, that they were trying very hard to hate him. Their hatred was built up, but I think the time came when they realised that they had really loved their little brother but tried to bury it. It worked out as bad as if the hatred had been real, though. One day they were all sitting around telling the wonderful dreams they had, and Joseph said 'I had a strange dream, too. I thought we were all in a field cutting grain and tying it up into bundles. We had each made a bundle, when your bundles all toddled over to mine and bowed down to it. It was the funniest thing.' Joseph expected them to laugh but they did not. Perhaps they thought he had made the dream up, for one said

scornfully, 'I suppose you think that means that some day we will bow down to you. Well, let me tell you, we never will.' Then another would say 'Bow down to you! You little squirt! I should say not. You keep still when your elders are talking.' Poor Joseph felt hurt. He had not meant to offend them but he was young and such a happy-hearted boy that he just let it go and thought no more of it. However, some months later they were all sitting around again, and this time Jacob was with them, and again the subject of strange dreams came up. Perhaps Jacob told of the dream of the ladder and the angels, and the others told of strange dreams they had. Joseph felt that he could speak then for his father was there, so he said 'I had another strange dream too. It seemed funny. I wonder if it had a meaning. I thought that the sun and moon and eleven stars came and bowed down to me.'

"Jacob was startled and said 'What is that? What kind of a dream is this you had my son? Shall your mother and brothers and I yet bow down before you!' Jacob knew that one of his sons would inherit the promise. He knew their failings. He had gained God's favour and he was not the oldest son. Could this boy of his be the one God had chosen? Jacob thought much of the dreams but the boys felt that Joseph was just trying to be smart and they were more jealous and bitter than ever. Then Jacob, who was getting old and could not go out with the flocks and herds as he used to, spent a long time weaving a beautiful cloak for Joseph. You know in those days they could not go to the store as we do and buy a nice piece of cloth and make it up in a few minutes. They had to shear the sheep and then card and dye the wool and then weave it on their looms."

"What do you mean by 'carding it', Mummy?"

"Combing it out so that it would make nice smooth wool. A hand-made cloak of fine wool was wonderfully warm and could be very beautiful. When the boys saw Joseph's new cloak they were very angry. Jacob had never woven any of them such a lovely cloak. They did not stop to think that it was one thing to make a cloak for one boy and quite another to make ten cloaks. They were jealous and angry and they could not do anything mean enough to their little brother.

"Jacob would not let Joseph go out in the hills with them, to keep the sheep. He saw their meanness and kept Joseph near him. He told him many stories of the past and probably let him read the family records.

"Jacob must have trained Joseph carefully and taught him all about God during those years for the things that happened in later years revealed a wonderful faith and knowledge of God that could have come to Joseph in no other way. The older boys did not have it. They were willful and wild, but Joseph was gentle, kindly and full of faith. Perhaps because of Joseph's dreams the old man would realise that God had chosen this boy for His own and would give him special training. Things went on fairly well for some time. The older boys were out with the flocks and herds most of the time and Joseph was around the tents. He learned to love his little brother, Benjamin, - who was a lovely baby - very dearly, and his brothers' hatred did not trouble him very much.

"When he was about sixteen, Jacob sent the older brothers to a place called Shechem to feed the flocks for the grass around where they were living was poor. The boys were gone some time and he began to get anxious about them. They had done things in the past that had caused their father much trouble and he began to wonder what was keeping them so long. He called Joseph to him one day and said, 'Your brothers have

been gone for some time and I am beginning to get a bit worried about them. Perhaps they are having some trouble. How would you like to go over to Shechem and see if everything is all right? You could go and return in a few days and let me know how everything is with them.'

"Joseph said 'I would like very much to go, father. It is not too long a walk and I will bring you word quickly again.'

"So he took a lunch and kissed his father and Benjamin goodbye and set out. It was early in the morning when he started and he walked all day across the hills and through the fields of Galilee. At evening he reached Shechem but he could not find any trace of his brothers. While he was looking for them he met a stranger who asked him who he was seeking.

"I am looking for my ten brothers, the sons of Jacob. They came here to feed my father's flocks but they do not seem to be around here anywhere.'

"They went on to Dothan', the stranger said. 'They thought the grass might be better there.'

"Dothan was fifteen miles farther but Joseph knew he could make that easily in a day's walk and he did not wish to return home without news of his brothers; so he rested for the night in Shechem and started for Dothan the next day.

"Joseph was a happy lad and probably whistled and sang as he walked along. At noon he would stop for his lunch and a drink and then start on again. It would be late afternoon when he finally reached Dothan and saw the large herds and flocks of his father feeding on the slopes of the hillside. He was very glad to see them for Joseph loved his brothers even if they were often unkind to him.

"The brothers saw him coming and recognised him by his bright-coloured cloak while he was still quite a way off. The very sight of that cloak made them angry. It was so pretty."

"Teacher showed us pictures of the Indians weaving rugs on their boms, Mummy", Linnet said. "Did Jacob make Joseph's cloak like they do?"

"Yes, dear. The methods used in weaving have not changed since the very early days. Probably Adam and Eve were the first to learn how to twist wool yarn from the wool of their sheep and weave it into garments, just as the Indians do now, for they learned to do many things in the 930 years that Adam lived."

"We are learning to weave at school, Mummy. I am weaving a pretty little bag now. I wonder how people first thought of how to make yarn, though."

"Probably someone was playing with some of the wool off a sheep, Linnet, and saw how easily it could be twisted into yarn. Most great discoveries come to us by such simple means. As I was telling you, the sight of Joseph's pretty cloak roused his brothers' anger and one of them said 'Here comes the dreamer!' Another said 'I would like to wring his neck! We are always getting into trouble on his account.' Then another said 'The very idea of him getting the notion that we would ever bow down to him. Of course, Dad is so crazy about him he might leave him everything when he dies.' 'If I had my way I'd soon

put a stop to that. I'd fix him so he would never get our father's wealth.' So one word led to another and while the first words were spoken half in idle jest, an ugly spirit was beginning to manifest itself. Soon one of the brothers said 'It would be a good idea to kill him now when there is no one to know. Then our father would divide his wealth between us. I sure would hate to see Joseph get everything.' Another would say 'If Dad knew as much about you as I do, he would not care to leave it to you.' One of them might taunt the other for they all knew of the wrong actions of the others and hid them from their father when they could. They were always afraid that Joseph would tell Jacob about their evil deeds. It was not long until Reuben saw that unless he interfered the others might do some serious harm to Joseph."

"Who was Reuben, Mummy?"

"Reuben was the oldest of the boys. He was kinder and nobler than the others but he was not enough older to make them behave. If they had all been one family he might have controlled them easier. Now, instead of telling them to leave Joseph alone, which he should have done, he said 'Don't harm the boy, after all, he is our brother. I know how you feel about him. It makes me angry to see the way Dad spoils him, but if we were to hurt him we would always be sorry. We do not want to have his death on our hands. I tell you what would be a good idea, though. Let us put him in that old pit in the pasture and just go away and leave him there. If he dies we will not be to blame.'"

"Oh, Mummy! What a nasty, cruel man", Linnet cried.

"Reuben was really trying to save Joseph without opposing his brothers. He was not man enough to take Joseph's part, neither was he mean enough to really hurt him. He thought that they would go away and leave Joseph there, and he would steal back when they were sleeping and lift him out and tell him to go back to Jacob. He meant to ask him not to let the boys know who had helped him. He thought 'It is no use getting them all sore at me by taking the kid's part. They all hate him but I can help him out and they will not know.'"

"Still I do not think he was very nice, Mummy. He was the oldest and should have made them leave Joseph alone."

"That was just what Jacob thought when he knew all about it many years after. He said 'Reuben, you are my oldest son, but you are as unreliable as water and you will never amount to anything.'"

"We must remember, however, that God was watching over Joseph and He could have prevented any harm coming to him had He wished. God knew there was a great work ahead for this boy who trust in Him and that before he could do that work he must have a training that he would not get in his father's tents. Jacob had taught Joseph faith, but that was not all he needed for the work he had to do and the place he had to fill in God's plan. That was why He did not interfere. When Joseph reached the place where his brothers were gathered around the campfire, he expected a kind greeting; instead he was seized by his brothers, and in spite of his protests he was tied up and thrown down into the pit in the pasture. He was not hurt much but he knew he might stay there for days and no one find him. Even his faith could not quite kill out the thoughts of his father's grief if he died there. I have no doubt that Joseph prayed earnestly to God to save him from a slow death."



“Soon after this, Reuben had to leave the others to go and gather up some of the sheep that were straying away. He had not been gone long when a band of Arabs, or Ishmaelites as they were called then, came by and stopped at the camp. Jacob’s sons were their cousins, for you will remember that Ishmael was Isaac’s brother. The sons of Ishmael hated Isaac’s family for they always felt that Ishmael should have had all Abraham’s wealth. Perhaps they stopped at the camp to talk or to buy meat and hides, for they were going down to Egypt with goods to sell. Now Judah, who was the fourth of Leah’s boys and perhaps about twenty at the time, was very fond of money and he saw the Arabs coming and said to the other boys, ‘Look here, if we leave Joseph to die here it will not do us any good except to rid us of him. But if we were to sell him to the Ishmaelites they would give us a good price for him and we would all have some money.’ One of the others answered, ‘That is true enough. They would pay a good price for him for he is a fine looking lad, even if he is a nuisance.’

“So they pulled Joseph up out of the pit and sold him. The Ishmaelites saw he was a handsome boy and strong, and knew they could get a good price for him in Egypt, so they paid the brothers twenty pieces of silver for him. Joseph pleaded with his brothers to let him go back to his father but they laughed at him, and in a few minutes Joseph was tied up and set on the back of a camel and on his way to Egypt. Reuben got the sheep gathered up and started back. He noticed that it was getting dark and none of the others were near the pit, so he thought he would go around and tell Joseph not to worry for he would come later and get him out. When he got to the pit he saw it was empty. Perhaps he had seen the Ishmaelites also and thought they must have heard Joseph’s cries and have taken him with them. He went back to the camp worried and sick, and said to his brothers ‘I have just been to the pit where we put Joseph and he is not there. What can I tell our father? He will be broken-hearted.’

“The other brothers just laughed at him and mocked him. Then they told him what they had done and gave him his share of the money they had received for Joseph.”

“Didn’t he try to get Joseph back, Mummy?”

“No, dear. Reuben was a weakling. He took his share of the money and did nothing. Someone suggested that they had better make up a good story to tell Jacob for fear he would suspect that they had done something to their brother. Then they noticed Joseph’s pretty coat lying where they had thrown it when they had pulled it off to let the Ishmaelites see what a fine, well-built boy he was. A slave dealer always examined a slave carefully to see that there was nothing wrong with him before he bought him. Then one of them suggested that they kill a kid from the flock and soak the cloak in its blood. Then they would take it back to Jacob and pretend they had found it lying in a field and thought it looked like Joseph’s.”

“I do not think I ever heard of such nasty, cruel boys, Mummy.”

“No, Linnet, fortunately there are very few brothers who would do such a terrible thing. They took the cloak back to Jacob pretending to be very much upset. Of course, Jacob recognised the cloak at once and thought just what they meant him to think – that Joseph had been killed by some wild animal.”

“Mummy, did God not punish them?”

“Indeed He did, dear one. God always punishes those who harm His children even when it is a part of His plan that things should turn out that way. He never MAKES anyone do what is wrong, but sometimes He does not stop them doing it when He sees it can be made to turn out right. He lets them show their real character, then He takes a hand and makes everything turn out right for those who trust in Him.

“In this way He can let the angels see how very wicked people who obey Satan get to be. He gives us a chance to show how we can trust our Father no matter what comes and that He will always come to our assistance. In this way the angels also see how much better it is to obey God and trust Him. So, as Paul says, *‘We are made a spectacle to angels.’* But God does not let those who hurt His children prosper by it. Joseph’s brothers saw how very much they had hurt their old father, and they really loved the old man. His grief hurt them, but that was not all. They soon realised that their hatred for Joseph had not been as great as they thought. They missed his cheery laugh, and they were ashamed. They could not forget how he had pleaded with them to let him go. Every time they saw Jacob’s sad face and saw him sitting thinking with tears running down his old cheeks they hated themselves more. Then Judah’s two boys both died and his wife died too. Sorrow and trouble came to the boys and every time trouble came they felt that it was a punishment for their treatment of their brother. The ten sons of Jacob were never the same after that sin.”

“What happened to Joseph, Mummy?”

“Well, after the first fright things went pretty well for him. God was watching over him, and the Ishmaelites probably felt disgusted with men who could sell their own brother and they treated him pretty well. Soon they passed through strange country and Joseph saw wonderful sights. Egypt was a marvellous country in those days. He saw things Abraham and Isaac had seen many years before and he was interested in all the things around him. He saw the great pyramid in all its glory. I will leave the story of that journey for another night, dear, for it’s getting late now. Here is a verse I want to give you and I would like you to learn it for it will be a help and comfort to you – *‘All things work together for good to those who love the Lord’*

“Here comes Daddy now, and it’s time you were in bed.”

### **Chapter 13: Joseph in Egypt**

“Mummy, you told me last night about Joseph and how he was carried away into Egypt, but you did not tell me if it was a picture. Was it, and what did it mean?” Linnet said the next evening when Mother came to brush her hair and tuck her in for the night.

“I saw two big, blue eyes were getting pretty heavy, Linnet, so thought we had talked enough for one night”, Mrs Grey answered. “Why, yes. It was a picture, Linnet, and I am glad you asked me before we continued the story for that picture ended when Joseph was carried into Egypt. I told you his life was like a picture book with several pictures. This one was the first, and the verses I read you showed you what it meant.”

“You mean Joseph pictured Jesus, Mummy? I love those verses and mean to learn them some day. I know part of them now.”

“Yes, dear. Joseph pictured Jesus in that story. Jacob represented God, as Abraham did, and Rachel, whom Jacob loved and sought first, was a type of the covenant God made with Abraham and which He repeated to Isaac and then to Jacob. Leah, whom Jacob married first, pictured the law covenant, while their sons pictured the Jewish nation who became God’s children through the Law. As Leah’s sons and the sons of the maid were wild and disobedient to God, and just as the boys hated Joseph, their brother, so the Jewish nation hated Jesus, who was their brother. Joseph’s dreams not only meant that some day the brothers who hated him would bow down to him, but also that Jesus’ brothers, the Jews, would some day recognise Him as their King. That time is almost here now.”

“Joseph’s brothers sold him, too, did they not, Mummy, and Judas sold Jesus.”

“Yes, dear. That is part of the picture though it was just as much the rulers of the Jews who sold Jesus. They sold Him for wealth and power. Judas, however, sold Jesus for thirty pieces of silver, which was the usual price that slave dealers in those days paid for a full-grown slave. Joseph was sold for twenty pieces because he was only a boy. Joseph was then cast into the pit, which pictured the grave where the Jews threw Jesus. Joseph did not stay in the grave either but was carried to Heaven. In Egypt Joseph became a great king, or rather prince. So Jesus will become a great Prince, the Prince of Peace.”

“It was a lovely picture, Mummy. What was the next part of it? Is it in that poem too?”

“Yes, darling. Would you like me to read the verses that tell of that part of the picture?”

“You mean the next picture, Mummy. This is a picture book, you know”, Linnet corrected her. “Please read me the verses first, Mummy.” Mrs Grey took her book and read –

“I turned from the scene in pity. Then I saw a palace fair;  
Reclining upon a divan was a temptress, seductive, rare.  
A slave boy knelt before her wafting a feathered fan;  
The pallor of confinement had replaced the healthy tan,  
But the dreamy eyes of the shepherd boy looked from the pale sad face.  
Not even his humble garments could hide the youthful grace.  
I saw him spurn the advances of the woman who claimed control  
Of his sturdy form, but whose cruel hand could never subdue his soul.

Falsely accused and slandered – the victim of her hate;  
Her bitter humiliation his pain must satiate.  
Even the walls of the prison relaxed to his friendly smile,  
And the heart of the warden melted before his lack of guile.  
In the next scene, raised from a dungeon he is seated upon a throne –  
The hand of God may discipline, but He never forsakes His own.”

“I like to think of that line, Mummy – ‘He never forsakes His own’, Linnet said. ‘It is nice to know God will never leave us.’”

“He says *I will never leave thee nor forsake thee*’, and that is one of the great and precious promises He gives to those who give their lives to Him, Linnet.”

"I have given my life to Him, Mummy. I want to be His and serve Him always. I know I may not be old enough to have a place in His Heavenly Kingdom, but I want to serve Him here. I would bve to be able to teach people all about Him and show them how good and kind He is."

"That may indeed be your privilege, Linnet. Learn all you can of Him now and leave the future to Him", Mrs Grey answered, kissing her little girl, who jumped into bed and pulled up the covers, then smiled up at her and said playfully, "You need not think you are going to get off with a little wee bit of a story like that, Mummy. I want to know what happened next, so just you turn over that page and let me see the next picture."

Mrs Grey smiled. "Not letting me get away with anything, are you? Well, let me see. We had Joseph going into Egypt, did we not? I seem to remember telling you that he would see the great Pyramid and the Sphinx. The Pyramid, a truly beautiful thing, was then covered all over with the casing stones and the few that still remain show that these stones were of white marble and fitted together so carefully that the joints could not be seen. Even the door was covered, and the sides were as smooth as a mountain of glass. The stones were polished till they shone, and it is believed that the fairy story of the prince and the glass mountain was founded upon the Great Pyramid as it was before the Arabs raided it many centuries after and carried away the white marble stones to build their palaces. When the morning sun shone upon it it sparked like a great gem. Some thought it was a temple to the sun on that account."

"What was it really, Mummy?"

"It was like a Bible written in stone and telling what was to happen in the world right up to the time when the Kingdom was set up. Indeed, it even showed the reign of Jesus and what will follow."

"Was it written in the language they used then, Mummy?"

"No, dear. There was no writing in it. It was all in symbols and hidden measurements. Some day I will show you pictures of it and explain its meaning. We have not time for that tonight. Joseph saw this great pillar, as the Bible calls it, and also the Sphinx which is close to it."

"What was the Sphinx, Mummy?"

"It is a great figure of a lion with a woman's head. No one knows who built it either, but the inscriptions in it give the history of the world in early days, and some have suggested that it was built before the flood as a tomb for Adam and Eve. Its true meaning may never be known till the resurrection, dear, when its builders are awakened from sleep to tell us all about it.

"Seeing such wonderful things helped Joseph to forget his loneliness and trouble, and soon he was placed in the market place to be sold as a slave. That was a very trying experience, but Joseph kept his faith in God and bore the humiliation as well as he could. He was bought by an officer in Pharaoh's court and was taken to a palace where he served as a slave. He did his work very well and showed a fine spirit, and soon attracted the attention of his master, who was called Potiphar. Potiphar gave him more responsibility and before long he had placed him over all the other slaves in the palace.

Here Joseph learned many things he could not have learned in his father's tents. He became a very clever manager, and Potiphar trusted him to look after all his business.

"Things went very well for some time, but trouble came after he had become ruler of Potiphar's house. The wife of his master liked Joseph, but she was not a good woman and one day she asked Joseph to do something for her that he knew Potiphar would not like. Joseph said he could not disobey his master even for her. He told her Potiphar trusted him fully and he would not do anything that would displease him. She coaxed and begged, but still Joseph refused. Now as I told you before, a slave is supposed to obey all orders of his master. Potiphar's wife tried to make him do as she wished. Joseph tried to avoid her and stay away from her, but he was in full charge of all the work and had to see that everything was done right. This made it impossible to avoid her, and she kept worrying him. At last his refusal to obey her made her so angry that she made up a story about him and succeeded in turning Potiphar against him. Joseph was called before his master and accused of doing the very thing he had refused to do. He was put into prison and did not even have a chance to explain. Potiphar trusted his wife and would not have believed him anyway."

"Why did God let that happen to Joseph, Mummy? He was good and true."

"God was working out His plans for Joseph, dear one, and was also trying out his faith. God often tries the faith of His children to see if they will trust Him and do right no matter what it costs. He had great plans for Joseph and He wished to test him first. That was all."

"Did Joseph know that, Mummy?"

"It would not have been a real test if Joseph had understood clearly, Linnet. When God tests us to see if we really love Him He does not tell us ahead of time except as He has caused His disciples to warn us that such tests would be permitted. Peter said, *'If ye are in heaviness through manifold temptations that the trial of your faith, being more precious than gold that perisheth, though it be tried by fire, may be found to the glory and honour of Jesus Christ.'* Joseph did not have that assurance. He just had the old stories that Jacob had told him of God's dealings with men and of men's folly in disobeying Him. Joseph was seized by the soldiers and put in a dungeon in the prison."

"What is a dungeon, Mummy?"

"A dark hole in the ground or a room with a little window away up high. The walls are usually made of stone and sometimes water trickled down the walls. The keeper of the prison would come at times with a little food which he put through a hole in the door. Soon Joseph's pleasant voice and cheery words won the keeper's heart and he put Joseph in a better room. Then, after a while, he became so fond of the young man that he let him out at times and they would talk, for the keeper was often lonely. It was not long before God had made the keeper a real friend for Joseph. Then the keeper let Joseph go free as long as he did not leave the prison. The keeper was a very busy man and he asked Joseph to do little things for him. Joseph was always pleasant and willing and it was not long before he was the chief helper of the keeper of the prison. He knew his story and he felt sorry for a lad who had been so unfortunate in his friends, and so he made life as pleasant as possible."

“Do the keepers in the prisons in our country ever treat prisoners like that, Mummy?”  
Linnet asked thoughtfully.

“The keepers are called wardens now, dear, and a prisoner who causes no trouble but is cheerful and pleasant is often made a ‘trusty’ – that is one whom the warden feels he can trust. He is given much freedom inside the walls and is often pardoned or allowed to go free some time before his sentence is up.”

“What do you mean by a sentence, Mummy? That means a group of words.”

Mrs Grey smiled. “That is one of the funny things about our language, Linnet. ‘A sentence’ has two meanings. It can also mean the number of years a person is forced to stay in prison for a punishment for a wrong act. In Joseph’s time people were not ‘sentenced’ to a certain number of years, however. They were thrown into prison and kept there till their masters set them free. Some were left there till they died. Joseph had been in prison about a year when two men from the palace of the king were put in prison too. One was the chief baker to the king and the other was his chief butler. It is possible that there had been a plot discovered to poison the king. Such things often happened, and in order to protect himself from his enemies the king had special cooks who were supposed to taste all his food and a chief butler who must taste his wine before he drank it. If the chief cook was friendly to the king’s enemies he could pretend to taste the food or taste a part he knew was all right. So, too, the chief butler could just pretend to taste the wine. If the king took sick after eating they might both be suspected of taking part in a plot to kill him. Perhaps this was what had happened in King Pharaoh’s palace. Joseph was given the task of taking food and drink to the prisoners who shared the same cell. They soon came to like him, and one morning he came with their breakfast and found them very sad and thoughtful.

“What is the matter’ Joseph asked. ‘You look very downhearted this morning.’

“We have had the strangest dreams and they are so much alike we were sure that they must have a meaning, but we could not think what it could be.’

“Tell me about them’, Joseph said. ‘Do not all the interpretations of dreams belong to God? Perhaps He will show me what they mean.’

“Then the butler said, ‘I dreamt that I saw a grape vine and I noticed that it had just three branches. In my dreams it seemed as though while I watched it I saw it bud and the grapes grow and ripen. I had Pharaoh’s golden cup in my hand and I squeezed the grape juice into it and took it to the king and gave it to him just as I used to do.’

“Your dream is a good one’, Joseph said. ‘The three branches mean three days, and in just three days Pharaoh will forgive you and take you out of this place and give you back your old job again. When that happens, please do not forget me, for I was stolen from my home and from my people and brought to this country and sold as a slave. I have never done anything wrong that I should be imprisoned here.’

“Indeed, I will not forget you. If my dream comes true I will mention you to the king’, said the butler.

"Then the baker told Joseph his dream, which was indeed very much like the butler's dream. He said, 'I thought I had three baskets on my head, one above another, and the top basket was filled with cakes and pastries for the king. While I was carrying them birds kept coming and stealing the bread.'

"Joseph's voice was sad as he said 'Your dream is not a good one. The baskets picture three days, but the dream means that in three days the king will remember you too, and will send and have you taken from the prison and killed and the birds will eat your flesh.'"

"Did the dreams come true, Mummy?"

"Indeed they did, dear. Just three days after that was the king's birthday and he remembered the servants and gave a big feast for all his workers. He sent for the butler and gave him back his job, but he hanged the baker. Probably he had found out that it was the baker who had been guilty and that the butler was innocent", Mrs Grey answered. "At any rate, Joseph's interpretation of the dreams came true."

"I guess he was not in the prison for long after that, Mummy."

"I am sorry to say he was there for two years more. The butler found that it was not so easy to speak to the king about Joseph. The king was a very haughty man and did not talk to his servants much. The butler was afraid to try and bring up the subject for fear the king would be displeased, so he waited and waited for a chance and none seemed to come. So that it was not till the king had two very strange dreams two years after that the butler got a chance to speak to him about Joseph. He came into the king's throne room one morning and noticed that the king seemed worried. He probably heard him send for his wise men and knew that something was wrong, but he did not dare ask any questions for, after all, he was just the king's butler. By keeping his ears open and keeping out of sight as much as possible, he soon realised that the king had just had two very strange dreams that worried him very much and that the wise men could not tell him what they meant. The butler remembered Joseph's kindness and his own promise to him. If he only dared to speak, the king might send for Joseph. He realised before long that the king was so worried that he might welcome any suggestion, so he brought the king some wine and then said, rather timidly, I'm afraid,

"May it please the king, I am reminded of my faults this day. Perhaps you may remember, too, that you were very angry with me about two years ago and put the chief baker and me in prison.'

"Well, what about it?' The king was very short tempered that morning. 'Speak out. What are you trying to tell me?'

"May it please your majesty, but we both had very strange dreams while we were in prison and we were also greatly troubled, but there was a young Hebrew lad there, a servant of the keeper of the king's prison, and he saw we were worried and asked us to tell the dreams to him. He told us the meaning. He said that you would forgive me but you would hang the baker in just three days. It happened exactly as he said.'

"Send for him at once!' snapped the king

“So the butler sent an order to the prison and said Joseph must come at once to the palace. Joseph thought that the butler had forgotten all about him. At first he had been very eager and had listened and watched every day hoping for some word, but when none came he lost hope, but he never lost faith. He knew that he was God’s child and God had not forgotten, and no doubt he prayed often that he might be set free if God would have it so, or have faith and strength for the trials if he must stay there still longer. Now he had longed and hoped for so long, that when the news did come he did not get excited. He went and had a bath and a shave and put on his best clothes and walked quietly behind his guide. For the first time in nearly three years he was free and walking through the streets. Nearly three years he had lived in the prison. He breathed the pure air and breathed also a prayer of thanks to God. I am sure that he had stopped to kneel and ask God’s blessing before he started for the palace. Now at last he stood in the great Throne Room of the greatest king in the world at that time, Pharaoh of Egypt. The king said, ‘I have dreamed a dream and no one can tell me what it means. I have heard that you can understand dreams. Is that right?’

“Now if Joseph had been a proud man he would have said, ‘I am Joseph. There is no dream I cannot explain.’ Instead he said quietly, ‘It is not me, O king. God will give you an answer of peace.’”

“I think God must have been very much pleased with Joseph, don’t you?” Linnet asked, thoughtfully.

“I am sure He was. God resisteth the proud and gives his grace to the humble’, Mrs Grey answered. “Pharaoh must also have been surprised for his wise men were proud and boastful. He said ‘In my dream I stood by the river and I saw seven fat cows come up out of the water. They were the healthiest and fattest cows I ever saw and they fed in the meadow. While I was watching them seven other cows came up out of the water. They were starved looking and very thin. They were thinner than any cows I ever saw. Then I saw them rush at the fat cows and kill them and eat them, but they still looked as thin as ever. I woke up then and lay thinking about the strange dream and I soon fell asleep again. This time I dreamt I saw seven ears of corn growing on one stalk. They were full of grain and rich in appearance. Then I saw seven thin ears of corn growing up behind them. They looked withered and scorched and they seemed to eat up the good ears. I woke up then and I sent for my wise men but they could not tell me what it all meant.’”

“Joseph said, ‘The two dreams are really the same and they have the same meaning. God has revealed to you in these dreams what He is about to do. The seven fat cows and the seven good ears of corn are seven years that are coming when there will be good crops in all the land. The seven poor cattle and the seven ears of corn also mean seven years. They will be seven years of terrible famine that will follow the seven years of plenty. This famine will be so great that it will eat up all the wealth of the land. It will be the greatest famine that has ever been known. God has repeated the dream twice to prove that His mind is made up and He will bring this thing to pass quickly. If the king will permit I would like to suggest that the king should choose out from his officers a man of great wisdom and understanding and set him over the whole land, and have him appoint officers to go through the land and buy up all the surplus food that is produced in the seven years of plenty and store it in storehouses all through the land so that there may be food to save the nation when the days of famine come.’



“King Pharaoh was pleased with the suggestion and he was greatly taken with Joseph’s modesty and wisdom. He said, ‘Where could we find a better man than this one who has the wisdom of the great God of heaven to guide him?’ Then he said to Joseph, ‘It shall be as you say, and I have today set you, Joseph, over the whole land of Egypt and over my house to govern it. The whole land of Egypt shall from now on be ruled according to your words. Only in the throne shall I be greater than you.’”

“How wonderful, Mummy! To make Joseph a king, when he was just a slave boy from the prison.”

“Wonderful indeed, darling. Now Joseph could see why God had caused him to have such severe trials and testings. It would never do to put a proud and haughty man in such a position.”

“God made Jesus a great Prince, too, did He not, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“Yes, darling, I see you have recognised the picture. In this one, too, Joseph pictured Jesus. You remember the last picture closed when Joseph was sold into Egypt. As Joseph was carried to Egypt, which pictures the world, and forced to become a slave in the house of Potiphar where he rose to a position over the other servants, so Jesus was sent into the world and took the form of a man, a slave of sin, for such men are in God’s sight. Here Jesus soon rose by His wisdom to a position as Master of the servants of God, and here He was also tempted and proved loyal and faithful to God. Just as Joseph was then accused of a sin he had not committed, Jesus was accused of stirring up trouble and was tried and sentenced to death.”

“Did the prison picture death, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear. In the Bible death is spoken of as ‘the great prison house’ and it also says that Jesus will *‘Bring forth the prisoners out of the prison house and set the captives free.’* Joseph was taken from the prison and made a great prince over all Egypt, and Jesus was taken from the grave and made a Great Prince over all the world. No one but Pharaoh was greater than Joseph and no one but God is greater than Jesus.”

“But Mummy, Joseph was nearly three years in the prison.”

“Yes, dear, and that is one place where a picture works backward. For the three years Joseph spent in prison pictured that Jesus would be three days in the grave. God uses a day to picture a year, but you see He also sometimes uses a year to picture a day.”

“I love the story of Joseph, Mummy. It’s like a fairy tale, only it’s true, and I think it’s nice of you to spend so much of your time telling me about the Bible. It’s nice to think that Jacob used to tell stories to Joseph, too. Mummy, will Joseph be one of the Ancient Worthies who will be a Prince in the Kingdom?”

“Yes, dear one. And the years he spent ruling Egypt will make him a kind and just ruler. No wonder God wanted him to be tested and tried, was it dear?”

“I hope I can see him some day, Mummy. Somehow I feel I could love Joseph.”

"We do not know who will be the Prince God will set over our country, darling. The Kingdom is coming so quickly that you may indeed see Joseph before many years, for you have put your life in the hands of the Great King and we know that He has promised that all who call upon Him in the time of trouble will be saved. Even if you should have to sleep for a while, we have His promise that the resurrection will soon begin and the last will be first. I think a fine verse to learn and to remember with this story is this, '*God resisteth the proud and gives His grace to the humble.*' So, dear one, never let the knowledge you have of God make you proud. Remember it is a great favour from God. He may test you greatly in the days to come. If that should happen, be faithful and true always, as Joseph was."

"I will try, Mummy. I will remember how God tested Joseph and how he never failed."

"He will guard you in the same way, my darling", Mrs Grey assured her as she kissed her goodnight.

## Chapter 14: A Great Prince

I turn to look at another scene. Before my eager gaze  
Is a vast expanse of country, quivering in the blaze  
Of the relentless sunshine that sucks up the water sweet,  
Turns the orchards to sand heaps and withers the ripened wheat.  
Beside a barren water hole bones bleach in the burning sand,  
While far across the desert moves a pitiful caravan.  
A starving land, a merciless sun, a sky of brazen heat –  
There is nothing but darkness and despair and suffering complete.

The next scene shows a palace. A princely figure stands.  
Before him kneel ten bearded men, lifting eager hands.  
Pleading with him for the precious grain to feed the flickering flame  
In man and beast in a distant land. They grovel and feel no shame.  
The Prince looks down upon them, but he sees a slimy pit  
And a bound and helpless figure that writhes in the depths of it.  
His slaves speed to his bidding, one is as a hostage bound,  
While the rest in sorrow retrace their steps over the barren ground.  
Their sacks are filled to bursting with the precious golden grain,  
But their hearts are heavy with regret and repentance's healing pain.

I turn to the scene in the palace. What message has it for me?  
Clothed in His garments of beauty, a mighty Prince I see.  
Raised by Jehovah's power, seated upon His throne  
He gathers wheat for His garner from fields where the Word was sown.  
A beautiful Bride from the Gentile world Jehovah has chosen for Him,  
She shares in His honour and glory and her beauty time cannot dim.

Over the earth there has fallen a drought. The waters of truth are dry.  
Men seek in vain for the Word of God and in their need they cry  
To the Prince of Peace, they barter their all for the precious bread.  
Only through Christ the Anointed can the hungry world be fed.  
Their waters of truth have failed them, their wheat is poor and scant.  
E'en the Jews – the brethren of Jesus – are feeling the pinch of want.  
In God's storehouse there is plenty, yet they suffer hunger and pain.  
When the Heavens withhold their moisture, there is always a dearth of grain.

They must go to the land of the Gentile, turn to the Christ in their need  
And receive at His hands a portion of truth they were wont to heed.  
Their hour of anguish is closing, their double is nearly past,  
But some must remain a hostage and into the dungeon be cast.  
So some of the Jews must suffer for that crime of the long ago,  
And some the drought of the wilderness and its pain and terror know.  
Those who turn to the Prince of the Gentiles will be by His bounty fed;  
If they seek their own salvation they will cry in their need for bread.

#### Murals of the Past

“What? Another story? What shall it be this time, a fairy tale?”

“Now, Mummy, you stop teasing. You know perfectly well that I want to hear more about Joseph”, Linnet protested. It was bedtime again and Mother had a few minutes free from the many duties of the day.

“Well now, let me see. I told you how the king made Joseph a great prince over all the land of Egypt. He did something else for Joseph then. He chose a beautiful bride for him and changed his name to Zaphnath-paaneh.”

“What a funny name, Mummy. Joseph was much nicer and easier to say.”

“Yes, dear, but the people of Egypt might have objected to serving a Hebrew. They had no use for Hebrews and would not even sit down to the same table with them, so the king felt Joseph should have an Egyptian name. I wonder if you can tell me what Joseph’s wife would picture in God’s plan?”

“Why, if Joseph was a picture of Jesus, then his wife would be the true church, Mummy.”

“Right, dear. And they had two children, which would picture that both Jews and Gentiles would be the children of Jesus in the Kingdom. Now Joseph chose officers to go through all the land of Egypt and gather up all the good that the Egyptians did not need during the years of good crops. This would show how, in the early days after Jesus died, there was plenty of truth in the world, and Jesus appointed His followers to gather it up and put it in storehouses for us.”

“You said the storehouses pictured the Bible, Mummy.”

“Yes, dear, and as the New Testament has many books and the Old Testament has many more, so there are many storehouses of truth in the Bible. Every book is a granary as one might say, and it was the followers of Jesus who placed all that truth where we can easily get it. Joseph paid a good price for the wheat, and so God has always paid a rich reward to the true followers of Jesus. The early days of the ‘Gospel Age’ (that is the time from Jesus’ first coming till His second presence) were years of plenty. Then Satan began to get control of the churches and he caused a great persecution, pictured by the hot sun, to break out against God’s people, and soon it became very hard to get the truth. There was a great famine. You know that it is always a lack of rain that causes a famine, and rain pictures – what, Linnet?”

“Truth, Mummy, for water is always truth and rain must be truth from heaven.”

“That is right, dear. When Satan began to persuade the churches that they must join with the governments of the world and try and set up the Kingdom on earth themselves and not wait for Jesus to return, they began to teach untrue things that Jesus had not taught, and soon the drought came and the true church suffered for lack of truth. The Bible had said *‘The days come, saith the Lord, when there shall be a famine in the land, not a hunger for bread or a thirst for water, but a famine for hearing the Word of God.’*”

“Was that the time when the ‘coin’ was lost, Mummy?” Linnet had not forgotten Mother’s teaching, and Mrs Grey smiled.

“Yes, dear. The true church put her coins of God’s Word away on the shelf and let them get covered with dust while she tried to please the world, and it was then that one coin got lost. The famine came in Egypt also, but it was caused by the lack of rain, which God permitted to picture the famine for truth. Now the people got along pretty well the first year. There was still a little water in the wells and the rivers, but their gardens and fields dried up and they had not enough food for their cattle. They went to the city to buy grain and Joseph opened a storehouse and sold them what they needed. The next year there was still no rain, and they would have starved but for Joseph’s provision. The king saw how true the dreams had been and how wise it proved to get ready. The people had been paid a good price for their grain in the seven years of plenty, and those who had been careful of their money could still buy food, but they found it was costing a lot to feed their sheep and cattle so they began to sell the animals. Joseph had those that were purchased put in pens and fed and watered. He did not buy them for himself but for the king.”

“Was there rain where Joseph’s people lived, Mummy?”

“No, Linnet. They got along all right the first year, but they had a great many sheep and cattle and soon found it very hard to get food for them. It was during the close of the second year that Jacob began to worry. The cities of Canaan had not prepared for the famine and food was getting pretty scarce. Some of the people were killing their cattle and using them to eat. Jacob did not want to do that. Then someone told him that there was plenty of food in Egypt, so he called his sons and said, ‘We will have to buy grain to feed the cattle or they will all die. I hear that there is feed for sale in Egypt. Take asses and load them with food for the journey, and go down to Egypt. Take money with you and buy enough to keep the stock alive.’

“So the ten brothers prepared for the journey and started out. They travelled as quickly as possible, for there was no food along the way and very little water. It was a hot, dusty trip and the land seemed all burned up. When they got to Egypt they inquired where they could buy grain and were told they would have to go to the city and see Zaphnath-paaneah, who was the only one who could sell the grain that was in the storehouses. Of course, they did not know **that** name and when they came to the office where Joseph was selling food to the people they did not recognise the Egyptian prince, but he knew them at once. They had not changed much in the years and were still brown, bearded men. Joseph had been wondering how his family was faring in the famine and so was not as much surprised as he might have been when he saw them there. He knew that they would not know him and pretended not to be able to understand their language.

“He said gruffly ‘Well, what can I do for you?’

“Please sell us food for our families and our stock, for the famine is very bad in our land’, said one of the brothers.

“Joseph said ‘How am I to know that you are not spies? You are not Egyptians.’ Joseph had a man who knew many languages and who interpreted the things that people of other countries said. This man repeated his words in Hebrew.

“The brothers answered, ‘We are honest men and all sons of the one father. We are not spies but our families are starving and we wish to buy food.’

“That is a likely story’, Joseph answered. ‘You cannot fool me, I know you are spies sent to find out about the distress and hardship in our land.’

“The brothers did not know how to convince him. One said, ‘Truly, Sir, we are brothers and the sons of one man. There were twelve of us but one is dead and the other is with our father at home.’ That told Joseph what he wished to know, that his father was alive and Benjamin also. He had not forgotten how these brothers of his had treated him, however. He remembered their jealousy and their cruel treatment. Yet, down in his heart, he still loved them and wished to help them if they were worth it. He wondered if they were treating Benjamin as they had him. He knew that sixteen years can make a great difference in a person’s character. They might have changed. Somehow they did not look as mean and cruel as he remembered them, and there was a note of sorrow in the tone they had used when they said one brother was dead.

“Joseph said, ‘I cannot believe your story. It is not likely that one man would have ten big husky men like you as sons; however, I do not wish to be hard on anyone who is in need. I will keep you all here and you can send word back to your home that you are suspected of being spies and will be kept prisoners till your younger brother comes to prove your story. If he does not come, I will know it is just a ruse to get into the country and you are spies.’

“So Joseph ordered them all seized and put in jail for three days while he thought it over. He knew there was no way they could send a message home, and he wanted time to think. At the end of three days he sent for them again and said, still using an interpreter and pretending he could not understand them. ‘I have been thinking this thing over. If you are really honest men and not spies, leave one of your number here as a hostage while the rest take what food you need and go back to your families. Then bring your younger brother back as a proof that you are not telling a falsehood.’

“One of the boys said in Hebrew – for they did not know he could understand – ‘This is the punishment of God for the way we treated Joseph. Nothing has ever gone right since then. We heard his cries and refused to listen to him or let him go. Now God is punishing us.’

“Then Reuben said, ‘I begged you not to be so hard on the lad but you would not listen to me. You know I tried to save him.’

“Joseph understood and his eyes filled with tears. It was good to know that one brother had stood up for him and had tried to save him. He remembered that Reuben had not been there when they sold him, and he saw that they had suffered. Still he was not sure

how great the change was, and he felt that it would not hurt them to be kept in doubt for a time. Perhaps Simeon had been the most hard and cruel to him, for it was Simeon he chose to remain a prisoner. He told the servants to bind Simeon and take him back to the prison to remain till the others returned with their brother to prove their story. Then he gave orders that they were to be given all the grain they wished to buy but that he himself would pay for it and the servants must put each man's money back in his sack with the grain."

"Why did he do that, Mummy?"

"Because he was good and kind and still loved his brothers. He would not take money from them for food that was needed to keep their families alive. He was rich and would well afford to help his family out", Mrs Grey explained.

"The brothers started back for their home. They were very sad and troubled for they had left one brother in prison. When they got home they told Jacob all that had happened. They wanted to take Benjamin right back and prove their story and get Simeon, but Jacob said 'Indeed you shall not. You have already robbed me of two of my sons, for Joseph is dead and Simeon is lost to me. I will not trust Benjamin with you. How could I be sure he would ever come back. If anything should happen to him I would die of sorrow.'

"The boys waited and waited, hoping that Jacob would change his mind. Time went on. Perhaps Jacob was hoping it would rain and they would not need more food but it did not rain and soon the food they had purchased was all used and the animals were going hungry again. Jacob called the boys and said, 'You will have to go back for more grain or we will all starve.'

"Judah said, 'We cannot go unless you let us take Benjamin with us for the prince said he would not see us unless we took him. If you had not refused to let us take him we would have gone back long ago. It has not been fair to Simeon to leave him in prison all this time.'

"I don't see why you ever told him you had a brother. It was thoughtless and unkind to me', Jacob grumbled. He had always felt they knew more than they let on about Joseph. He had seen the look on their faces and did not trust them.

"He asked us if we had any relatives who could prove our story. What could we say?"

"But Mummy, that was not true, was it?"

"Not exactly, Linnnet. I guess they were getting desperate for their children were going without food. At last Judah said, 'If you well send Benjamin with me, I will guard him with my life. If we do not go soon, we will all die anyway.'

"Then Jacob gave in, but he said, 'If you must take the lad with you, take also a good present to the prince of the best fruits in the land, spices and butts and honey from our stores. Take back also the money you found in your sacks. It must have been a mistake. Perhaps if you take a nice present to the prince he will be kinder to you. Take your brother and go and may the God of our fathers go with you and give you favour that he may release Simeon also.'

“So the brothers started out for Egypt and they took Benjamin with them. You may be sure they were good to him. When they reached Egypt they went at once to the office of Joseph, and when he saw Benjamin with them he said to the servants, ‘Take these men to my palace and prepare a feast for them, for I will have dinner with them today.’

“When the brothers were ordered to follow the servant and they saw other servants take their animals away, they said, ‘He is going to keep our animals and make us all his slaves.’ But the servant took them to the palace and led them into a lovely room and sent a servant with water to wash their feet. They could not understand it. They saw the head servant of Joseph’s house. They knew he must be the chief servant for they could see that all the others obeyed his orders, so they stopped him and said, ‘When we were here the last time we bought grain, but when we opened our sacks on the way home we found the money in the sacks. Here it is. Please take it.’ But the servant laughed and said, ‘Your God must have given you a present, for I had the money for the grain you bought. Keep it.’

“Then he went and got Simeon and brought him to them. Together they got the present all ready to give to Joseph, who came to see them at dinner time. They were all rather nervous when Joseph came in to see them but he spoke very kindly to them and asked them what kind of a journey they had and if the old man they had told him of, their father, was well. They were surprised to see him so kind. He had his interpreter with him and said, ‘Ask them if this is the little brother they told me of’, and the interpreter, who knew that Joseph could speak Hebrew better than he himself could, repeated the question, then when they said ‘yes’ he repeated that. He did not know Joseph’s reason for acting as if he could not understand, but it was not for him to question the great prince.

“Joseph looked down at the little brother he loved so well and said in a voice that was rather husky, ‘May God bless you and be good to you, my son.’ Then he felt he could not keep it up any longer and he left the room in a hurry and went to his own room, where he just broke down and cried for joy, and he thanked God for His goodness. When he felt he could keep control, he called the servant and told him to put the food on the tables, then he gave orders as to how the boys were to be seated. They were surprised when the servant asked their names and then seated them in order, with the oldest at the head of the table and so on right down to little Benjamin at the foot. Then Joseph entered and took his place at his own table like the great prince he was. He watched the brothers and listened to their words. They talked freely, thinking he could not understand. He sent portions of the special fruits and pastries that were brought to him and told the servant to be sure and give the youngest twice as much as the others. Then he watched to see if they would appear annoyed or jealous, and he was glad to see that they seemed pleased to see their little brother favoured.”

“Did he not tell them who he was, Mummy?”

“No, dear. He was not satisfied that they were not just putting on a good act for his benefit and that when really tested would prove to be as selfish as he remembered them, and he meant to be sure that they would be kind and thoughtful of Benjamin. He called a servant and told them to see that their animals were cared for and fed and their sacks filled with grain, but to put each man’s money back in his sack as they had before. He told them to take his golden cup from his table and put it in Benjamin’s sack and

then, when they had finished eating, to show them to rooms where they could spend the night in comfort and near to each other.

“When the morning came he sent them all away to go to their homes, but he called his servants and said, ‘When they have had time to get well outside the city, follow them and accuse them of stealing my cup. Make a good show of searching for it and when you find it bring them all back. I want to see how they will act.’

“The servants suspected that these men were old friends of Joseph’s and that he had a good reason for his command, so they obeyed him carefully, and when they caught up to the brothers they looked very angry and demanded why they had repaid kindness in such a way. ‘Did you imagine you could carry off the prince’s possessions without him knowing? Where is his golden cup? He uses it to tell the future with. Come on now. Hand it over.’

“Of course, the brothers said they did not have it, that they would not steal anything, but the servants seemed sure they had taken it, so one of them said, ‘You may search all our things and if you find anything that does not belong to us, the one who is guilty shall die for his sin.’

“So the servants made a great show of searching all their bags, and finally they found the cup just where they had put it, in Benjamin’s sack. The brothers were horrified. They did not know how this had happened, and Benjamin was frightened and said he had never touched the cup. They all packed up and returned to Joseph’s house.

“Joseph was well pleased to see that they had not let the boy be taken prisoner but had all returned with him of their own accord. He looked very stern as he demanded, ‘Why have you done this thing? Did you think I would not know?’

“Judah was worried but he spoke up and said, ‘What can we say, my Lord? How can we clear ourselves of this charge? We can only offer to become your slaves and to serve you in order to pay for this misdeed. We cannot understand how it happened that your cup was in the sack, but we feel that it is a punishment for our past sins and will all become your servants till the debt is paid.’

“No! No! I am not a hard and unjust man. I will keep the one in whose possession the cup was found and he shall work to pay for it. The rest of you may return to your families. It would be unjust to punish you all for the sin of one.’

“Then Judah came and knelt down before Joseph and the others also knelt at his feet, and Judah said, ‘Oh my Lord, please hear me and do not be angry, for you are as great as the king and we are just poor and honest men. You asked us about our family when we were here before and we told you of our old father and our little brother. This lad is the only son of our father’s favourite wife, and she is dead. He had a brother but he died also. Our father loves the lad better than everything he owns, and to be separated from him would kill our father. You bade us bring our brother to you to prove that we were not spies, but our father was afraid to trust him out of his sight and we waited till you drove us to come. When we found we must return or starve, our father still refused to let the boy accompany us. I myself gave my father my word that I would protect the lad with my life. I cannot go back to our father without him. Let me take his place I beg of you. I will



be a true and faithful slave to you if you will let the lad return to our father. I could not bear to bring more trouble upon the old man.'

"The others also agreed to take Benjamin's place if Joseph would set him free. Joseph was sure now that his brothers had changed. He just could not stand it any longer, and he turned and told his servants to leave him alone with his brothers. As soon as they were alone together, Joseph turned to them with tears running down his cheeks and said,

"O boys, do you still not know me? I am Joseph, your brother whom you sold into Egypt.' Then he saw the look of fear and horror on their faces and cried, 'Oh, do not be afraid of me! It was all in God's plan for us, and He sent me on ahead so that I might be able to take care of you when this famine came. He has made it possible for me to save many lives. Truly, I do not hold your treatment of me against you. I want you to hurry back home and bring our father and all your families here, for God has showed me that there will still be five years of famine in the land. I will feed you all and care for you till the rains come again. Look, cannot you see it is really me, alive and well? Benjamin, dear little brother, how I have longed to see you. Come here close to me.'

"Benjamin had admired the great prince all the time and now he came to Joseph, and Joseph took him in his arms and kissed him tenderly. The others crowded round him. They were happy but still a little afraid. They knew they deserved to be punished for the terrible treatment they had given this little brother, but he forgave them and was so kind to them. He gave them wagons and horses to bring their families to Egypt so they could all ride in comfort, and he gave them beautiful clothes and food for the journey. Pharaoh heard that Joseph's brothers were in Egypt and he sent word to Joseph to bring all his family to Egypt and offered chariots that they might travel in style.

"How glad the brothers were. For sixteen years they had been unable to sleep soundly for the memory of that old sin. They had been so sorry for what they had done and now it was all right. Joseph said, 'You meant it for evil but our God has turned it to good.'

"They wasted no time in getting back to Jacob. The poor old man could not believe that it was true till he saw the lovely gifts Joseph had sent him, and then he cried for joy. 'How good God is to me', he said, 'and I will see my son Joseph again before I die.' They all packed up hurriedly and started for Egypt, and Joseph went to see Pharaoh and asked if he might settle his family in the land of Goshen, for they were shepherds. This pleased Pharaoh, for Goshen was a fine country for sheep and the Egyptians did not keep sheep. They worshipped the cow and counted it a sacred animal, and cows will not feed where sheep are kept. Joseph knew this, for his family kept both sheep and cattle, also camels, but he knew that they would be happier in Goshen for it was a fine country. Pharaoh agreed that they should have Goshen for a homeland. Then Joseph went to meet his family. How glad Jacob was to see him! They left the rest of the family there and went on to the city where Joseph took his old father to see the king. The king loved the old man and was deeply touched when Jacob gave him the blessing of God."

"Did they stay long in Egypt, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. They settled there and when the famine was past they stayed on to be near Joseph. It was a fine country and they had no wish to move. After some years Jacob died and they took his body back and buried him with Rachel, but they returned to Egypt

and built homes there and lived there for many years. At first when Jacob died the brothers were afraid that now Joseph would punish them, and this hurt Joseph. He felt that they should trust him after all his kindness.

“Of course, they could not understand that it was another of God’s pictures. God was using Joseph to show us that we must come to Him and put ourselves in His care before He can really take care of us and bless us. He was showing how Jesus would forgive the Jews for all their unkindness to Him and would give them His richest blessings in the years to come when, with His bride, the true church, Jesus will rule over all the world. He will sell the truth to the people of the world. But he will give it freely to His own people.

“As the years of famine went on, the Egyptians sold all their possessions to Pharaoh for food. They sold their cattle and Joseph had these put in corrals and fed and cared for. Then they sold their homes, and Joseph took the people to the cities and fed them there. At last they had no more money and Joseph said, ‘If you will give yourselves to Pharaoh, he will see you have everything you need and you will be his children.’ So they sold themselves for food. Then they too were clothed and fed at the king’s expense. When the famine was over, Joseph gave every family a plot of land and seed to plant and homes to live in. Every year after that they had to give a certain amount of all they grew to the king as rent for the land.”

“Was that a part of the picture, too, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear. The people of the world will finally have to give up everything they have to God, and own that ‘The world is the Lord’s and the fullness thereof, the sea and all that dwell therein.’ They will even have to give themselves to God and own Him as their Lord and Master. Then God will feed them and care for them as His own dear children.

“That is the end of the picture of Joseph, Linnet. Next time we will have a look at another of God’s wonderful pictures. That was a long story too, and you are getting pretty tired. Off to bed now. You may take that verse to learn this time. Say it with me, dear”. And they repeated it together, *‘The world is the Lord’s and the fullness thereof, the sea and all that dwell therein.’*

## **Chapter 15: God Makes Another Picture**

### Miriam’s Lullaby

The blue river murmurs along on its way  
Singing a lullaby all the long day.  
Many the babies that sleep in its arms,  
Hushed is their weeping, lost are their charms.  
Cold is their resting place there neath the waves;  
God of our fathers, look down on their graves.

### Chorus

Hush little darling, hush do not cry.  
Fear stalks thy cradle, but sister is nigh  
Guarding thy sleeping while God from above  
Looks down in pity and shields thee in love.  
Hush then dear baby, surely His arm

Guards thee from Pharaoh, keeps thee from harm.

Hard is our lot as in exile we roam  
Serving our taskmasters – longing for home.  
Toiling all day on the banks of the Nile,  
Oppressed and despised and forsaken awhile.  
But the God of our fathers will send us release,  
Perhaps 'tis thy hand that will bring us to peace.

The sphinx looks on sadly, a tear in her eye.  
She hears all our moaning, our grief-stricken cry.  
Never thought Egypt would turn and oppress  
The children of him who relieved her distress.  
Helpless and sad on her pillow of sand  
She grieves, for their actions bode ill for the land.

The God of our fathers looks down from the sky.  
He hears all our weeping, gives ear to our cry.  
He'll send deliverance by a strong hand,  
He'll save us from Egypt and give us the land  
He promised our fathers. Hush, then, baby dear,  
Nothing came harm you, God's angels are near.

What tho' the mothers of Israel weep,  
No grief shall disturb you. Peacefully sleep.  
The God that raised Joseph from dungeon and grave  
Still lives in the Heavens, mighty to save.  
Sleep then dear baby, abide in His love,  
Angels are watching o'er thee from above.

Mrs Grey sang the words of the lullaby softly, half under her breath. Linnet stood nearby watching her prepare a glass of fruit juice.

"Do you think you could spare time to tell me a story tonight, Mummy? It is such a long time since I had a story", she said rather plaintively.

"Poor little girl. You have been rather neglected lately. Ever since Daddy took sick my time has been too full for stories, and I guess my mind too has been occupied with other things. You have been very patient and helpful though, dear one, and I think that I might be able to slip away and spend a while with you tonight. That is if the medicine doctor left puts Daddy to sleep as it is intended to do."

"Is Daddy really getting better Mummy? I don't know what I would do if he died, Mummy. He is so good to me and I love him so much."

"I know you do, dear one", her mother answered as she took the fruit juice to her husband and made him comfortable for the night. As soon as she saw he was resting she returned to her little girl. Linnet had finished her preparations for the night and was waiting. Mrs Grey took the slender little figure into her arms and said,

"You asked about Daddy, dear one. I believe you would rather know the truth, and indeed I have never tried to hide anything from you. Daddy is very ill indeed and we cannot tell yet whether it is the Father's will to leave him with us for a while longer or not.

The doctor does not seem very hopeful but Daddy's life is in our Father's hand and we have promised to accept His will in all things. If He should wish to take your Daddy home to Heaven, we must try to think of it from Daddy's point of view and be glad for him. You know that Daddy has not been well for some time, and has had to work far too hard. Perhaps this is just our Father's way of giving him the rest he has needed so badly. If He should wish to take Daddy away from the hard work and give him a chance to live where there would be no worry or care or hard work, we could not ask to have him left here with us, now could we?"

"No, Mummy. But life without Daddy would be so lonely. I just could not bear to think I would never see him again. It was bad enough when Grandma died, but to lose my Daddy would be terrible' and Linnet's eyes filled with tears.

"Darling", Mrs Grey said, holding her very close, "Suppose Daddy had a chance to get a far better job over in England, at work that would not tire him, where he could be near his own people and where his health would be better, we would not stand in the way of his going, would we? We would say, 'It means health and happiness and a chance to see his dear ones.' Suppose he could not possibly take us with him, that in order to look after the job he must be free for he would be travelling a great deal of the time. He would not like to leave us but he would be getting a far better salary and would be able to give us many things we cannot have now, and into the bargain he would never be tired and sick but would have great honour. We would all hide our own loneliness and help him get ready for the journey. We would smile if it killed us and send him off with a smile and a kiss. The loneliness would be ours to bear and we would be as cheerful as we could for Daddy's sake. If we looked sad and kept saying how lonely we would be, Daddy could not tear himself away. Now, dear, you know that Daddy gave his life to the Father many years ago, long before you came to live with us, and he has longed so much to go to the wonderful Home the Father has prepared for him. Now if God has sent for him to go, you and I must just forget ourselves and think of how happy Daddy would be. He would see Grandma and all the dear friends who have gone to be with God. He would see Jesus and be working for Him, and he would never have those terrible headaches any more."

"But Mummy, we could not see him."

"He would not be far from us though, dear. If he went to be with Jesus he could watch over you all the time. When I was a little girl my Daddy built us a house. The thing I remember most clearly about that house was the window. Daddy put in the front door. It was our pride and joy. It was a lovely ruby-coloured glass and all smooth and shiny on one side, while the other was rough and pebbled. Anyone who was in the house could see out of that window as clearly as if it was made of plain glass, but everything had the prettiest rosy glow. Those who were outside could not see in at all. To them the window looked black and forbidding, and even if someone was watching you from inside and standing right close to the window, you could not see them. Mother used to watch over us from the window when we were playing. We never could tell if she was there but if anyone troubled us she would come to help us. We had some neighbours who had two very bad and troublesome boys that would sometimes come right in the yard and take our things or hurt us. Mother could see them through the window and come and help us.

"The day I was thirteen, Daddy and Mummy gave a party for me. It was to be a surprise, so when I was going to school Mother gave me a note to take to a friend of hers after school. I went with the daughter of this friend and we played at her home for a while. I

was disappointed because I wanted to get home and see if there were any presents for me. I thought Mother might even have baked a cake for me, so I felt rather neglected as we walked home. I will never forget going up to the door with my friend and I can still remember how black and empty that window looked. There was not a sound. Then I opened the door. What a shout there was! All my friends, indeed all the children from my room at school were there in the hall waiting for me. The house looked lovely for Mother and my sister had decorated it and there was a long table simply loaded with lovely cakes and sandwiches and jellies. I was so surprised that it brings tears to my eyes yet when I think of it. Every little friend had some gift for me and they were all piled up on a table. It was the only party I ever had in my life but I have never forgotten one thing about it.

“Now, darling, going home to Heaven would be something like that to Daddy. That window is just like death. When you are in God’s home you can see everything that is happening here. We are on the outside of God’s house and the window looks dark and empty to us. But it is not really that way. Jesus is there, and all our loved ones, and we have only to open the door and go in. That is, the members of God’s own family may enter when He calls them. Daddy is one of that family. If he has to go through that door we could not see him but he could watch over us. To those who are not God’s children death means just going to sleep and sleeping till Jesus wakes them, but to Daddy it would just be going through the door to the beautiful home Jesus has prepared for those who serve Him faithfully and who have given up the earth to have a place with Jesus. We would not even ask God to let Daddy stay here to be sick and weak and unhappy, would we?”

“No, Mummy. I understand now and I will be brave no matter what happens for I know it is God’s will. Now, Mummy, please tell me a story so I can have it to think about. You were singing a little lullaby tonight, Mummy. Was it not the one Miriam sang to her little brother, Moses?”

“I cannot say of course just what Miriam sang to her little brother, Linnet, but it is called *‘Miriam’s Lullaby’* and is true of Moses so she could have sung it had she known it”, Mrs Grey smiled.

“You know, there are four hundred years between the story of Joseph and the story of Moses. During those years God left the Israelites, as they were called, pretty much to themselves. They lived in Goshen for many years and they became very numerous. They did not mix with the Egyptian races for they were shepherds and the Egyptians did not like them. The Egyptians, as I told you before, worshipped the sacred cow, and the sheep spoiled the pastures for cattle so they hated shepherds.”

“How could anyone be so silly as to worship a cow, Mummy?”

“It **is** silly, Linnet, yet there is a race today who stills count the cow as a sacred animal. They live in India and they consider it a real sin to kill a cow or a bull for meat. They have kept up the old Egyptian worship all these years. God used this foolishness on the part of the people of Egypt to work out His own purposes in regard to the children of Israel. It kept them from marrying people of Egypt and becoming a part of that heathen race. At the end of the four hundred years the Children of Israel had become a mighty race, and now God wished to keep His promise to Abraham that after four hundred and fifty years He would bring Abraham’s family back to Canaan and give that land to them. The

Children of Israel, however, had become very fond of Egypt and they had built homes there and did not wish to leave. God knew that if they were to be His people and do His will, they must come to hate Egypt and to wish for the land God had promised them. They knew of the promise for they had kept the tablets Jacob had left them but they had not added anything to the record after Joseph died. His was the last tablet. They knew, too, that the time had come for them to leave Egypt and they had no wish to obey God's will and go. They were too happy, living there among the heathen. God could not let anything interfere with His Plan, so he caused a king to come to power in Egypt who had no love for Joseph and no feeling of loyalty to the laws that had been made during his lifetime. This king, who was also called Pharaoh – for that word really means 'king' – called his counsellors together and said, 'These Israelites are becoming too numerous. If something is not done before long there will be so many of them that they may take our country from us, or if we should happen to go to war with some other country they might join our enemies. We must find some way to stop that.'

"So they set rulers over the Israelites who made them work for a very small salary and made them build great palaces and buildings for the Egyptians. They set foremen over them and made them work like slaves. They built two great cities for the Egyptians. Their life became very hard. They were made to work harder and harder and were given such a small amount of pay that they could barely live on it. Still they seemed to multiply. The Egyptians made them work in the fields and factories and finally, when they realised that they were increasing in numbers, the king gave orders that every boy born to the Israelites must be killed at once. He called the nurses who cared for the women of Israel and gave them orders to see that no baby boy was allowed to live. The nurses were kind women and they pretended to agree but they would not obey the king's orders. Then Pharaoh gave orders that every boy baby must be thrown into the river and drowned. He sent his soldiers to see that his orders were obeyed and many baby boys were killed.

"Just about that time a man of the tribe of Levi married a woman of the same tribe and they had a little girl first. They called her Miriam. After a while they had a little son, whom they succeeded in saving from the soldiers and they called him Aaron. It was about this time that Pharaoh ordered his soldiers to hunt out the boy babies in Israel and drown them. Aaron was saved but when he was about four years old another little boy was born. He was very beautiful and his mother kept him hidden for three months. It was not easy and she was terribly worried every time she saw a soldier; she thought he had come for her baby. Miriam took great care of her little brother and guarded him well, but when he was about three months old his mother knew she could not hope to keep him hidden. He was beginning to make too much noise and she knew soon he would be crawling and then the soldiers would be sure to find him."

"What terribly cruel men the soldiers must have been, Mummy, to be willing to kill innocent babies."

"It is all a part of Satan's evil rule, Linnet, darling. Wherever he has power he tries to make the things that are good and beautiful seem weakness. You remember I told you of the worship of the false gods? That worship was in full power in Egypt, and the people were taught that it was a sign of weakness to show love or affection, mercy or kindness. They worshipped power, and the bull is one of the strongest of all creatures for his size, so they made the bull a sacred animal."

"Why does Satan want to make good things seem bad, Mummy?"

“Because he is the enemy of God, dear, and God is love. Satan wants people to despise love so they will not know or seek God. God is *‘slow to anger and plenteous in mercy’* so Satan wishes to make people admire cruelty and anger and hatred. It is the same influence that makes bad little boys think it is smart to torture frogs and flies and other helpless things. Whenever Satan is in power, he tries to make the people as much like himself as possible. So the people of Egypt were taught to sacrifice their own children to the false gods. If the soldiers felt any pity for the helpless babies they were told they must kill, they would be mocked and laughed at as softies and sissies. God meant to teach the people of Egypt that their cruelty would end in suffering and death for themselves and to teach the children of Israel that His way of love and mercy was best. Now He was showing them just how very cruel the Egyptians were.

“As I told you, Miriam’s little brother was three months old and his mother and father were terribly worried about him. They never heard a step outside their little home that they did not fear it was a soldier coming to kill the baby. Then the mother thought of a plan. She thought it was her own plan but it was really God who put it into her mind. Maybe she could save her baby by letting it go. She had heard the Pharaoh’s daughter loved babies and that she was really kind and good, and she thought if she could get Pharaoh’s daughter to see **her** lovely baby she might take it under her protection. She gathered bulrushes from the bank of the river and carefully wove a basket which she plastered all over with pitch to make it watertight. When the basket was completed she tried it out in the river to make sure it would not leak. Then she lined it carefully and made a nice soft bed in it. She wove a cover also to keep the sun out, and when it was all prepared she placed her little boy in it and carried it down to the river one lovely morning. She had fed the little fellow and put him to sleep first so he would not cry, and then she called Miriam and told her to hide in the bushes and watch the basket to be sure no harm came to the baby. After awhile the daughter of Pharaoh came down to the river. She loved to bathe in the cool water, and her maidens came with her. Miriam’s mother had counted on her coming that morning, as she usually did, and she had placed the basket where the princess would be sure to see it. The princess had not been long in the water when she noticed the basket among the rushes and said to one of her maids, ‘What is that over there in the rushes? It looks like a basket.’

The maid waded over, and sure enough it was a covered basket. ‘Bring it here’, said the princess, and the maid pushed the basket over the water to the princess. The other maids crowded around. I am sure Miriam breathed a prayer to the great God of Israel as she watched from her hiding place while the maids carefully lifted the lid of the basket. The sun shone in the baby’s eyes and made him blink. He was so lovely that the princess could not resist him, and when he opened his eyes and the sun was so bright and he saw so many strangers crowded around him, he cried.

“‘Poor baby!’ cried the princess. He must be the child of one of those poor Hebrews and they have hidden him here to protect him from the soldiers. It is a terrible thing to kill such precious little babies. I would like to have this wee darling for my own. I will take him home with me and care for him.’

“‘But he is so little! How would you feed him?’ one of the maids would say.”

“‘Didn’t they have bottles for babies then, Mummy, like May had for Lisle when he was little?’” Linnet asked.

“No, dear. They had no prepared baby foods such as we have either. Then Miriam came timidly forward and said, ‘Perhaps the princess would like to have a nurse for the baby if she wishes to keep him. I know a poor Hebrew woman who has just lost her baby and I am sure she would be willing to nurse this baby.’

“‘That is fine!’ said the princess. ‘Go and get her for me.’”

“I know who Miriam got to take care of the baby, Mummy; she brought her mother.”

“ Yes, dear. That is just what she did. It is the only case on record where a mother was paid a good salary to take care of her own baby. Now everything was changed. They could throw open the windows and let the baby laugh and cry and squeal all he wished. If any soldier dared to come, they would say ‘You cannot touch that baby. He belongs to the princess.’ They did not have to hide him any more. The princess paid the mother well and provided food and clothes for the baby and also for his mother so she could give all her time to caring for little Moses, as the princess named him.”

“It was an odd name, Mummy.”

“Yes, dear, and like all Egyptian names it had a meaning. It meant ‘Taken from the water.’”

“I guess he was the very first water baby, Mummy”, Linnet laughed, thinking of a story her mother had recently read her.

“I guess he was, Linnet. From that time on, Moses was well cared for and when he was old enough to eat stronger food his mother took him to the princess again. Of course, the princess had seen him often but now he was to live in the palace and to be her very own. I think she may have hired Moses’ mother to watch over him still, for Moses grew up knowing all about the God of his people and he would not learn that from his Egyptian teachers. Now, dear, we must leave the story of Moses for another day for it is time for Daddy to have his medicine.”

“Was it a picture, Mummy? You did not say”, Linnet said as Mrs Grey stooped to kiss her goodnight.

“Yes, Linnet, in more ways than one. Moses pictures how Jesus would be born of the Israelite people at a time when they were under bondage to their enemies, and would be cared for in Egypt, though the other babies of His home town would be killed by the king’s soldiers. That was the real picture of Moses’ birth, but he also shows how God’s children are under condemnation to death and if they will give up their lives to God’s service He will protect them and take them under His care and then train them for His service. He will supply all their needs and provide the robe of Christ’s righteousness as a covering for them, and He will give them the bread of life and the water of truth. They will no longer be under the condemnation of death but will be of His own household and will be trained to be princes, or as the Bible calls them, kings and priests of God.

“Moses’ mother had to give up her baby of her own free will to get all those great blessings for him and so we must give up our lives before God can give us the wonderful



things He has for us. He has promised us that He will supply all our needs if we will give ourselves to Him.

“Here is a verse to learn and think of while I go down to take care of Daddy. *‘Seek ye first the kingdom of God and His righteousness, and all these things shall be added unto you.’*”

“That is a lovely verse, Mummy”, Linnet said, climbing up for one more hug and kiss.

“Yes, darling. It is one of the *exceeding great and precious promises by which we become heirs of the divine nature*”, Mrs Grey said as she turned out the light and went downstairs to minister to her invalid.

## **Chapter 16: Moses, the Prince, Runs Away**

An old man sat in meditation deep,  
On Midian’s heights upon a long-past day.  
Around him grazed a flock of snowy sheep.  
He saw them not, his thoughts were far away.  
Anon he stroked his hoary flowing beard  
That fell in ripples o’er his troubled breast,  
For in the silence everywhere he heard  
The cries of people bitterly oppressed,  
Of tiny babies snatched from mother arms  
To feed the hungry monsters of the Nile;  
Of maidens, fair and young with many charms  
Compelled to slave for cruel masters while  
Their parents toiled throughout the livelong day  
For tyrant lords who beat them with their whips,  
Until they fell exhausted by the way  
Yet no complaint fell from their trembling lips  
Lest death or torture should their portion be.

He thought about his mother, sad, toil-worn,  
Who hid him on the river’s restless wave,  
Of the princess who heard his cries forlorn  
When with her maidens she came down to bathe.  
He thought of bright, quick-witted Miriam  
Who watched the bushes where her brother lay;  
Of how she brought his mother back to him  
To be his nurse and guide upon the way  
Of righteousness and knowledge of his God.

The thought of days of splendid palaces,  
The brilliant splendour of the Pharaoh’s court;  
Of aged hands all gnarled with callouses;  
Of men slain to provide a nation’s sport.  
Of hours spent beside his mother’s knee  
Learning about the true and living God.  
That gentle mother’s face he seemed to see  
And his father – broken under Pharaoh’s rod.

“Mother, Daddy seems a bit better tonight does he not? I heard his voice when he spoke to you and it sounded stronger”, Linnet said a few evenings later.

“Yes, darling. Daddy is much better tonight. The doctor says he may get better now and be with us for a while longer”, Mrs Grey answered. The anxiety of the past weeks had put new lines in her face and more grey in her hair, even though it had not shaken her faith and trust in her God.

“I cannot say God answered our prayers, Mummy, for I remembered what you said and I could not ask Him to make Daddy better. I just asked Him to help me to be unselfish and brave and to do what He knew was best for us all.”

“My darling, that is the very finest prayer anyone could make”, Mrs Grey answered with tears in her eyes. “God gives the very best to those who leave the choice to Him. For the very first time there seems to be a chance that Daddy will be permitted to stay with us, and I am sure that your prayers did reach the Father’s ear and He was pleased to see that you were willing to let Him have His way. Now, dear one, Daddy has fallen into a quiet sleep and if you wish I can give you a little while tonight.”

“I wanted you so much, Mummy, but I could not ask you to come if Daddy needs you. I would love to hear more about Moses and what happened after he went to live in the palace”, Linnet answered, and Mrs Grey brushed her hair as she said,

“Well, darling, Moses had a great deal to learn. He must learn all the wisdom and knowledge of the Egyptians and be tested as to whether he would choose to believe in the false gods of Pharaoh and his family or be true to the great God of Israel. His mother may have been a great help to him for she would have been able to teach him about God. In this way he could see the foolishness of serving gods that were made of wood and stone. Strange, weird gods they were too. There was one that had a head like a beetle and another with a head like a bird, and the people of Egypt made sacrifices to them. Moses thought how much more beautiful it was to have a God that was a great Spirit, invisible but powerful, who did not demand that humans should be sacrificed to Him before He would bless the people. He learned where this false worship started and how the real God had sent the flood to punish the wicked people once. He saw how cruel and hard the false worship made the Egyptians, how they taught the people that love and gentleness and kindness and truth were just signs of weakness, but he saw how those very things were all the finer things, the things of the true God. So Moses remained true to God even in Pharaoh’s palace, and he grew to love the children of Israel and wished to help them.

“Of course we know very little about Moses’ early life. It is possible that he was not allowed to have his mother with him after he was old enough to get along without her help. He may have been kept away from his people and let think he was really the son of Pharaoh’s daughter. It may not have been till he was grown up that he learned that he was really one of the children of Israel. It may be that he did not learn who he was until the princess who had loved and cared for him was dying. He was taught all the knowledge of the Egyptians and brought up to be a prince. It is quite possible that he did not suspect who he was until he was a man and then, when he learned about how he had been found in the river, he may have set out to learn what he could from his real people. He may then have learned of God from the wise people of his own race. The Bible does not tell us about those years. It is not till Moses was forty years old that we are told more about him. At that time he knew that he was really an Israelite and all

about his parents. He had also learned the true history of his own people and had come to know and love God.”

“I wish we could know more about him, Mummy. It would be nice to be really sure of how he lived”, Linnet said.

“Some day, dear one, you may hear the story from his own lips, for Moses is one of God’s faithful prophets and will have a big position in the Kingdom that is coming so quickly. Then we will know all about what really happened. The Bible does tell us that when he was forty he loved his own people and was greatly troubled over their suffering. He must have known all about God and have seen the records of Israel and learned from them for it was Moses who put the tablets all together and wrote them out on parchment as they are in our Bible only not divided into chapters or verses. Perhaps it was the story of Joseph that made him sure that God had put him in the palace of Pharaoh so he could learn to be a great leader and help his people. When he was forty he tried to gather the people of Israel and get them to accept him as their leader sent from God to help them.

“The people, however, knew him best as an Egyptian prince living in Pharaoh’s palace and felt that he might be just a spy, so they would have nothing to do with him. They did not feel that they could trust him. Still Moses tried to help them. One day he was walking along where the Israelites were working for Pharaoh and he saw a Hebrew working and an Egyptian overseer came along and started to whip the worker with his big whip. Moses got so angry that he went over to the Egyptian and tried to make him stop. The overseer became very angry and hit the poor Israelite again and knocked him down and began to hit him still harder. Moses hit the Egyptian and knocked him down. He did not get up again.”

“Mummy, first you said it was a Hebrew and then you said it was an Israelite. Were they both the same?” Linnet asked.

“Yes, dear. A Hebrew meant ‘One who crossed over.’ The name was given to Abraham by the people of the land before he left Ur and went over to Canaan. The whole family of Israel was soon called Hebrews by the people around them. It showed that they did not settle anywhere but travelled from place to place and would not take part either in the heathen worship or in the pleasures of the heathen people but were a separate people - the people who crossed over. The children of Jacob were called ‘Israelites’ or ‘Children of Israel’ because they were all descended from Jacob and God has changed his name to Israel. So you see an Israelite was also a Hebrew.

“The Egyptian overseer did not get up after Moses hit him, and when Moses examined him he saw that he had killed him. Probably the Israelite he had been beating was unconscious also, for Moses looked around and saw that there was no one in sight, so he thought ‘I had better bury this fellow before someone finds out what I have done. If it comes to Pharaoh’s ears that I have killed one of his overseers he may put me in prison and then I cannot help my people any more.’ So we rolled the dead man into a hole and covered him with sand. Then he helped the Hebrew and went away thinking no one knew what he had done.

“The following day he saw two Israelites fighting and he said to them, ‘You are brothers. You should not fight. If you would only all work together you might free yourselves from

Pharaoh for there are so many of you. You must be like brothers and all work together.' Moses did so want to set them free and be their leader.

"But the man said, 'Who made you our judge or leader? I suppose you would like to kill me like you did that overseer yesterday. When Pharaoh gets hold of you he will see you do not lead anyone.' Then Moses saw that the people knew what he had done and the man's words led him to believe Pharaoh knew also. Moses saw that he must get away somewhere or he would be arrested and perhaps killed for what he had done."

"Would not the princess help him, Mummy?"

"The princess was dead and it was another king or Pharaoh who was ruling and he was as cruel as the one who had been kind before him and had no liking for Moses. Moses knew that he had no one who was a real friend. He slipped away that night and went across the river and way out into the land of Midian."

"Where was that, Mummy?"

"Midian was a part of the wilderness or wild country between Egypt and Palestine that Jacob had crossed to go to Joseph in Egypt. There were very few people living there and it was a lonely place with deserts and mountains and very little water. Moses travelled for about three days and then he stopped to rest by a well. Pretty soon seven dark-skinned but very pretty girls came along driving a large flock of sheep. They drew water from the well to give the sheep a drink. They poured the water into a trough but some shepherds came along with their sheep and drove the girls away and would not let their sheep have any water. Moses made the shepherds leave them alone, and watered their sheep himself. The girls were the daughters of the priest of Midian. Evidently he was a priest of the true God. When the girls got home with the sheep he said 'How is it that you have come home so quickly today?' for the shepherds usually delayed them so that they were late getting home. 'An Egyptian came to help us and made the shepherds leave us alone', answered the girls.

"Where is he? Why did you not bring him home? Go and call him to come and have dinner with us', said their father. When Moses came the priest liked him and asked him where he was going. Moses told him he had offended the king and had to hide, so the priest offered him a job looking after his sheep. Moses stayed there and married one of the girls."

"Did Moses marry a black girl, Mummy? You said that the seven girls were dark-skinned."

"Yes, dear. Moses' wife was black or very dark, perhaps rather more like the Arabs. The land of Midian was named after one of Abraham's sons who had settled there, a son of the wife he married after Sarah died. Jethro, the priest who was good to Moses, was very dark-skinned and his daughters were very dark, and this caused trouble afterwards. Perhaps Abraham's last wife was a dark-skinned woman for the Midianites were like Arabs and after many years became very wicked and cruel and caused the Children of Israel much trouble."

"It seems funny to think of a good man like Moses marrying a dark woman. "

"Things were different in those days, Linnet. You see people now have forgotten that they are all children of Adam and of Noah, and some white people treat those who are of a different race as if they were inferior. In those days when Moses lived, people had not forgotten that 'God made of one blood of the nations of the earth and fixed the bounds of their habitation.' It is really the white man's fault that the dark races are not as far advanced as we are. It was not considered a disgrace to marry into a different race then. Moses' wife was probably a very fine woman.

They had two little boys and Moses was quite content to live out in the hills as a shepherd. He could not forget the suffering of his people but it was a good training for him to be away from the riches and glory of Egypt, and from its cruelty and its false gods."

"Does it not seem funny, Mummy, that God took Joseph to Egypt to train him and then took Moses away out to the country to work as a shepherd?"

"God always trains His children in the best way for the work they have to do for Him, Linnet", Mrs Grey answered. "Joseph knew nothing of city walks and could not have governed Egypt or saved the people without the training he got in Potiphar's house. Moses knew all about city ways but he could not have led and cared for the Children of Israel without those forty years in the wilderness."

"Forty years, Mummy? Was he there that long?"

"Yes, dear. He was forty years old when he had to leave Egypt and he was forty years more in the land of Midian, and he learned many things there.

"One day when he was out in the hills around Mount Sinai watching Jethro's flocks and thinking about his own people and what they were suffering in Egypt and how once he had thought that God would use him to help them, he saw a strange sight. There was a bush burning. At first Moses was startled, for a fire up there in the hills in hot weather could be a very dangerous thing. Moses wondered what had set the bush on fire and was watching to see if the fire was going to spread through the dry grass and so endanger his flocks when he saw that the fire was not burning the bush. He was astonished to notice that the leaves were as bright and fresh as ever. That made him curious. A bush on fire and yet not being burned was something new. He started over to see what was really happening when a voice spoke to him so clearly that he nearly jumped.

"Do not come any nearer', said the voice, 'Stay where you are and take off your shoes, for this is holy ground.' Moses obeyed, and the voice said, 'I am the God of Abraham and of Isaac and of Jacob.' Moses was afraid and hid his face from God. Then the angel, for it was really the Logos or angel messenger of God, spoke again."

"Why did He was He was God if it was really the Logos, Mummy?"

"You remember how I told you that the Logos of a king could only repeat the words that the king spoke? So the Logos, who always carried God's messages and was His visible messenger, must only repeat the words God told Him to speak. It had been the Logos who had appeared to Adam, and to Abel and Noah and also to Abraham and Isaac and Jacob. The word 'God' means a 'Mighty One' or a Powerful One so it was true that it was

the God or Mighty One who spoke to Moses' fathers. The Logos was 'I have seen the affliction of my people who are in Egypt and I have come to save them out of the hands of those who are oppressing them. Come now and I will send you to Pharaoh that you may bring my people up out of Egypt.' Forty years before Moses had felt quite able to lead the Children of Israel, but now he was not quite so sure of himself. God could not use him when he was proud and confident of his own power, but now he knew he was unable to lead the people but would trust in God to do the work.

"Moses said 'Who am I that I should go to Pharaoh? I cannot save the people of Israel', for Moses thought 'I was a coward, I ran away and left them to suffer because I was afraid of Pharaoh. I, who thought I was brave and strong, ran away!' Yes, Moses was ashamed.

"The Logos answered 'Surely I will be with you and this shall be a token of my care; when you bring the people out of Egypt you must bring them here to me. They shall worship God right here on this very mountain.'

"Then Moses said 'When I go to them and tell them you have sent me and that you are the God of their fathers they will ask me 'What is His name?' What can I say? There are many gods worshipped in Egypt.

"The Logos answered, 'I am that I am. When they ask you, simply say, "I AM hath sent me." Then you may tell them that the God of Abraham and of Isaac and Jacob has sent you. That is my name forever. Go then, and gather the elders of the people and tell them that I have said "I have visited you and seen what is happening to you and I am going to bring you up out of the land of Egypt, to the land of Canaan, to a land that is flowing with milk and honey." They will listen to you and you must take them with you to Pharaoh and tell him that your God has visited you and you wish to go three days' journey into the wilderness to worship Him. I know that the king will refuse to let you go; he will do everything to stop you going, and I will stretch out my hand over Egypt and will punish him, and after that he will let you go. I will do more than that, I will give you favour with the people of Egypt and when you go you shall not go empty-handed but you shall borrow jewels and silver and gold and clothing from the people of Egypt.'

"Moses was still afraid to go, and he said the people would not believe him. Then God said, "What is that you have in your hand?"

"Moses answered, 'It is my rod.' Then God said, 'Throw it down on the ground.' When Moses obeyed it turned into a snake and Moses was afraid of it, but God said 'Pick it up by the tail.' Moses did, and it turned back into a rod again. Then God said, 'Put your hand inside your cloak.' Moses did, and when he took it out it was all white and withered with leprosy. Then God said, 'Put it back again.' And when Moses obeyed it became well again.

"Then the Logos said, 'You may show them those two signs, and if they will not believe you then take water from the river and pour it out on the dry ground and it will turn to blood before their eyes. If they will not believe the first two signs they will believe the third one.'

"Still Moses hesitated and said, 'Oh Lord, I am not eloquent, I am slow of speech and it is hard for me to talk.'

“The Logos was almost impatient with his hesitation, and he answered sharply, ‘Who made man’s tongue? Who made the deaf and dumb and blind? Was it not I? Now go and I will go with you and teach you what to say.’

“But Moses answered, ‘Oh Lord, please send someone else.’

“Then the Logos answered, ‘Your brother, Aaron, is a good speaker and an eloquent man. I will give him to you for an assistant. He is coming for you even now and when he sees you he will be glad. You shall speak my words to him and he will speak for you, and I will be with you and will tell you what to do. He shall be to you for a mouth, and you will be like a god to him. Take your rod with you and use it to show signs with.’

“Then Moses did not argue any longer. He knew Aaron would be glad to help him and that God would be with them. He went back home and told Jethro he wanted to go back to his home and see if his people were still living, and his father-in-law said, ‘Go in peace.’ So Moses took his wife and his two sons and started out for Egypt. Now, dear one, it is time to give Daddy his medicine again and that is quite enough for one night.”

“But Mummy, you always forget to tell me what the pictures mean. I love the stories for themselves but I want to know what they mean too”, Linnet protested.

“Right, darling. I did forget. Well, this picture has a beautiful meaning. Moses, you remember, lived in Egypt till he was forty and then he offered himself to the people of Israel as a leader, but they refused him and in his attempt to help them he came into danger and he had to leave Egypt and go to Midian. This showed how Jesus, whom Moses pictured, would offer Himself to Israel to be their leader and to save them from their enemies, but they would not have Him and would say, as they said to Moses, ‘Who made you a ruler or a judge over us?’ Moses’ flight to Midian pictured how Jesus would then leave the earth and go to heaven and wait there till God’s time to save His people. When Moses reached Midian he stayed with Jethro, who was a priest of God and so represented God, and married one of his daughters. This showed that while Jesus was waiting God’s right time to set up the Kingdom and save His people, He too would take a Bride from the children of God.”

“But Mummy, Moses married a black woman. How could she picture the true church?”

“Well, darling, it was this way. Sin is black and this picture shows that the members of the true Church were sinners just like any other people before they came to Jesus. *‘There is no man righteous, no, not one,’* for *‘All have sinned and come short of the glory of God’*. So Moses’ wife, though she is pictured a child of God, also showed that even those whom God calls His children here are stained with sin.”

“I see, Mummy. She did not get white when she married Moses though, did she?”

“No, dear. She did not, but as Moses pictured Jesus, his goodness covered her and brought her a blessing. Her two children pictured the two seeds, the earthly seed who will live on the earth and the heavenly seed who will live in heaven with Jesus.”

“Did the fire in the bush also mean something, Mummy?”

“Yes, darling. It was when the time came for God to save His people that the fire in the bush was seen. The bush pictured the Christian church. Jesus said His Word would be like a grain of mustard seed which a man planted and which grew into a shrub or bush as big as a tree. This bush which Moses saw was a picture of the Church and the fire showed that when the time came for Jesus to save the people of earth there would be fiery trials in the churches which would try the faith of God’s children. God would speak to His people by those trials and purify them. Paul says *‘Do not think the fiery trials which try your faith are strange, for your faith is more precious than gold.’* God’s people are often called part of the body of Christ, and so Moses not only pictured Jesus Himself but sometimes all the members of His body or Church. So here we have a picture of God calling His true Church to do a special work for Him at a time when fiery trials would be testing the faith of all who claimed to be His.

“The three signs God gave to Moses pictured things that would happen to show the Church that the time had come for the people of the world to be freed from Satan’s power. The first sign, you will remember, was the rod that turned into a serpent. The rod pictured God’s rule of the earth through His Logos, before Adam sinned. Then God let go His rulership, just as Moses dropped his rod, and everything in the earth became evil. When God picks up His rod and takes back the rule of the earth everything will be right and He will guide and lead the people of the world. So when we see that the rule of God has come to seem very evil to mankind and His Word has been turned to error and there seems to be no truth in the world, when the churches are teaching things that are false and people do not seem to want to know the truth, we may know that the time has come when God is about to take back His rod and rule the earth again.

“When Moses put his hand inside his cloak and it became leprous and then he put it back the second time and it was healed, he showed that a time would come when God’s hand would be hidden from men and it would seem to become sinful. Moses’ hand pictured the means He uses to show His will on earth, that is the Church, so when the Church became sinful it was to be cleansed by a touch with Christ, put under His robe, as we might say. Then there was the third sign that water poured on the ground would turn to blood. This showed that God’s pure truth (for water always pictures truth) would appear like blood to the people of the earth. People would say, ‘The sacrifices God made the Israelites offer were nasty, bloody things’ and even the beauty of the ransom sacrifice would be lost.

“When Moses reached Egypt he must go to the elders of Israel and show them these signs. So Jesus, when He returned to earth to set the people free from Satan’s power would first show His true Church how the Word of God had been made to seem sinful and had been changed by the errors of Satan, but Jesus would turn it to pure truth again. How the Church also had become leprous and sinful but by coming close to Jesus it would be made pure and that the sacrifices of Israel were pure and holy things and not evil. When Jesus showed these signs we would know He had returned.”

“Was that how you knew Jesus had come back to rule over the earth, Mummy?”

“Yes, darling. We saw signs of His presence and came close to Him and were made clean”, Mrs Grey answered. “There is one more picture, dear. God told Moses he must speak to Aaron and Aaron would repeat his words to the people. This showed that when Jesus returned to set up His Kingdom He would not be able to speak directly to the



people as He had when He came the first time but must speak to them through those who were His representatives. Why could not Jesus speak to the people, Linnet?"

"Because He is a great Spirit and they could not see Him, Mummy. You told me that the people of this earth would never see Jesus again."

"Yes, dear. Aaron was Moses' brother and the Church is composed of the brethren of Jesus, children of God like Jesus was. Now, dear, those are all the pictures in this story and next time we shall see what happened when Moses got to Egypt."

"Mummy, how do we know Moses was a picture of Jesus?"

"Moses told us so himself, and Peter also tells us to look for the picture when he says 'Moses truly said, *A prophet shall the Lord God raise up unto you from among your brethren, like unto me. Him shall ye hear in all things, whatsoever he shall say unto you*' (Acts 3:22). Jesus was the prophet Moses pictured. Now dear, I must go at once. Goodnight, and may our Father keep you in His care."

Mrs Grey kissed her little girl and slipped away, and Linnet was soon fast asleep.

## **Chapter 17: God's Judgment on Egypt**

In Pharaoh's heart a strange disturbance reigned.  
Long had all men respected every whim  
Of his proud heart. Yet now two men had gained  
Admittance to his presence, defied him,  
Demanding that he free the race of slaves  
O'er whom he held the power of life and death;  
But he would see them all laid in their graves  
Nor set them free as long as he had breath.

What tho' they only asked a week's respite  
To offer sacrifices to their God?  
Could he expect them to return? They had no right  
Except the right to bow beneath his rod.  
Nay! He would hold them fast and make them pay  
For every moment's worry he had felt.

"These slaves are idle! I will see they have  
No leisure for religion or for God.  
Increase their toll of brick and now withhold  
Supplies of straw. More freely use your rods.  
All discontent by idleness is caused. Give them more work!  
The masses have more freedom than is meet,  
So drive them harder, do not let them shirk,  
And soon we'll have them cringing at our feet."

A week had passed after our last story. Mr Grey had improved rapidly and laughter had taken the place of anxiety and whispers in the Grey home. The days of convalescence had brought added duties to the busy mother, but tonight she sat again by the bedside of her little girl.

"It's a whole week since I had my story, Mummy. I have missed it, but I read the stories you have written for me when you could not come. It is so nice to see Daddy getting well again that I have not minded anything."

"I am sure you have not, dear. But I think we can take up our Bible stories again now. Let me see, what was the last story I told you?"

"You were telling me about God's pictures and you had just finished the picture of Moses in his father-in-law's home, Mummy. He had gone back to see his people and to show them the three signs God gave him."

"Yes, dear. That was where we had to stop for a while. Moses showed the elders of Israel the signs God gave him and then he took the elders and Aaron with him to Pharaoh. They were very respectful to the king and asked him to let them have three days' holiday to go out into the hills and offer sacrifices to God."

"That was not very much to ask, Mummy. Surely after they had been working so hard he would let them go for three days", Linnet said.

"The king knew very well how hard the people had been forced to work, dear. He also knew that he had not been treating them right, and he was afraid that if he gave them a little freedom they would demand more. So he said, "Who is your God that I should obey Him? I do not know your God and I will not let you go."

"He is the God of the Hebrews and He has come to us and asked us to make this sacrifice to Him. If we do not obey His voice He may punish us. Please let us go."

"Aaron was the speaker, as God had told him to be. The king turned to the elders of the people of Israel and demanded, 'What do you mean by coming to me with such a request? Why are you not at your work? What right have you, Moses and Aaron, to take these men from their duties? Get back to your tasks.'

"They left him quietly and the king called the men he had set as foremen to make the Israelites work and said, 'The people are not working hard enough. They have too much spare time. From now on you must not supply them with straw to make the bricks to build my palaces. Let them gather their own straw and demand that they make the same amount of bricks they did before.'"

"Did they make bricks of straw, Mummy?"

"They mixed straw with the clay, just as our plasterers mix hair with plaster, and iron and wire with concrete to make it stronger. Up to this time Pharaoh's own foremen had provided the straw and clay for the bricks. Now they had to go out in their hours of rest and gather straw themselves. This meant that they had no time to rest. They complained to Moses and said he was to blame. Moses and Aaron with their leaders went to Pharaoh and complained to him that they could not do the work unless the straw was provided, but he laughed at them and said, 'You are idle, so you say let us have a holiday to sacrifice to our God. Get back to your work.' When they returned from speaking to Pharaoh the people were waiting for them and they said, 'Now may God judge you and punish you, for you have made the Egyptians hate us and they will kill us with overwork.'

"Moses was troubled and went to God and said, "Why have you treated the people like this, O Lord? Why was it that you sent me to them for Pharaoh is treating them worse than ever and you have not done anything to help them."

"That was not a very nice thing for Moses to say, was it, Mummy?"

"No, dear. Moses had not yet learned to wait for God to act. God did not scold him, however. He just said, through the Logos, 'Now you shall see what I will do to Pharaoh for disobeying me. I appeared to Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. They knew me only as the Almighty God, but they never even heard my name. I shall be known to you as JEHOVAH and I have established my covenant with these people and will give them the Land of Canaan for a dwelling-place. I have heard their groans and I know of their sufferings. Say to them, 'I am the Lord and I will bring you out of the Land of Egypt and rid you of your bondage. I will redeem you with a stretched-out arm and with great judgments and will take you to myself for a people. I will be your God and you will know my power which brings you up out of Egypt.' Moses told the people what God said but they would not listen to him because they were being made to work so very hard by the slave drivers. So God sent Moses to Pharaoh again and Moses said, 'But Lord, he will not listen to me.'

"God said, 'I have made you seem like a god to Pharaoh and Aaron is your prophet. He will let the people go but not at once, for I will send punishments upon the land and the people for the evil deeds they have done, then I will bring the Children of Israel out of Egypt. Now go to Pharaoh and when he says "Show me a sign to prove that you are sent by God" you must throw your rod down on the ground and it will turn into a serpent.'

"So Moses did as God said. He gave his rod to Aaron and when they went into the palace to see Pharaoh, Moses did not say a word but stood still and speechless, like a god, while Aaron did the talking. The king asked for a sign and Aaron threw Moses' rod down and it turned into a snake, but the king had some of his own wise men there who were prophets of the false gods and they said, 'That's nothing! We can do that too.' So they threw their rods down and they turned to snakes also, but the snake that had been Moses' rod killed them and swallowed them, and then Aaron picked it up and it turned back into a rod again."

"Oh Mummy! How funny", Linnet cried", Moses would have all their rods inside his own."

"That was just what he had, dear. Pharaoh was angry and sent them out and refused to listen to them. Then God told Moses and Aaron to go the next morning and meet the king when he went to bathe in the river and tell him that if he did not let the people of God go, He would turn all the water in Egypt into blood."

"How could He do that, Mummy?"

"God can do anything. He made the water and the earth and He can change anything He wishes. Moses and Aaron obeyed, and when the king came down to the river to bathe and refused their request, Aaron stretched out the rod over the water and the rivers and streams and even the water in the wells and in the dishes and pails in the houses all turned into blood, so there was not a drop of pure water in all Egypt. The fish in the river all died and floated on the streams and soon began to smell terrible, but the

wise men of Pharaoh showed him how they could make water turn to what seemed like blood also by their magic, so Pharaoh would not pay any attention to Moses.”

“How could the wise men do that, Mummy? I thought they were wicked men.”

“They used the power of Satan, who is also very powerful. Pharaoh was angry and soon he was hungry too and there was no water for cooking. When he got thirsty he could not get a drink. He called the men of the country to hurry up and dig wells for him because he would not obey God. So the Egyptians dug new wells and used the water in them and the water in the river remained bloody and impure for a whole week.

“Then God said to Moses, ‘Go and tell Pharaoh that if he does not let the people go I will send a swarm of frogs that will come right up into his house.’

“Moses obeyed, and the frogs were sent. They came out of the river by millions and simply covered the land.”

“Was the river still turned to blood, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“No dear. The water in the river gradually cleared itself and after about a week it was fairly pure. Now, however, the frogs came in millions and they were, if anything, worse than the blood had been for they came right out of the river and swarmed like a living carpet over everything. They hopped in the open doors and windows of the houses and got on the tables and chairs and even in the beds of the people. They got into the wells they had dug and into their eatables till Pharaoh could not stand it any more. His own wise men had proved able to call frogs out of the river but unable to send them back. Now he sent for Moses.”

“Mummy, were there any frogs in the part of the Egypt where the Children of Israel were living?” Linnet asked.

“Yes, dear. The water turned to blood there also and the frogs came up over the land.”

“But they were God’s people, Mummy. Why did He let them be troubled that way? I thought He took care of His own people.”

“So He does, dear one. But the Children of Israel had not been faithful to Him. They had taken to worshipping the false gods of Egypt and had forgotten to try to please Him. So God let them have a little of the trouble that came to those who disobeyed Him. The water turning to blood had the same meaning as it had when Moses showed them the sign God had given. It showed that even those who claimed to be God’s Own people would not understand the Old Testament when Jesus came to set up His Kingdom on earth. They would have come to share the view of the people of the world that God was a hard, stern Master who liked to see people suffer and that the old sacrifices were nasty and distasteful things. God’s Word would have come to be very unpopular everywhere. Then evil teachings, like the frogs, would be spread everywhere, even among God’s own people, and would spoil their food and water. What is the real food of God’s people, Linnet?”

“God’s Word, is it not, Mummy?”

Yes, dear. Jesus said *'Man shall not live by bread alone but by every word that proceeds from the mouth of God.'* So the pure food of God's Word and the water of truth were spoiled, first by being made to seem evil and then by having errors mixed with them.

"Pharaoh sent for Moses and said, 'I cannot stand these frogs. They sicken me. Take them away from the land and I will obey the command of your God and let the people go.'

"Moses told Aaron to answer Pharaoh and tell him that he would prove God's power by destroying the frogs, but for him to set the hour and that would prove that God had really answered. Pharaoh said, 'Then let the frogs be destroyed tomorrow,' and Moses said, 'Very well. So that you may know that the true God is faithful and powerful, the frogs shall all be destroyed tomorrow except those that are in the river.'"

"Mummy, if the river turning into blood showed that God's Word would become unpleasant to the people, what did it mean when the people dug wells to get water from?" Linnet asked.

"That is the kind of question I like to hear you ask, dear; it shows you are thinking. Let us remember that the river was the source of water to the people of Egypt. It then pictured the source of truth to the world. What would that be, Linnet?"

"The Bible, Mummy, answered the child.

"Yes, dear. Then the time was to come when the truth in the Bible would be unpleasant to the people of the world because of the stories of the sacrifices and of God's judgments. It was also unpleasant because it told of the coming punishments of God. The people then started to dig wells where they could get water or truths they liked better. That pictured that the people of earth would start to hunt for truths they liked better than those in God's Word. The teaching of Evolution was one well, Mormonism another, and Christian Science another. These are wells that people have dug for themselves. The water (or truth) in the Bible gradually cleared itself to all who really loved it and searched to know the meaning of God's judgments."

"Did the frogs all go away the next day, Mummy?"

"They died, dear one. Wherever they were, and just so the false teachings will all die when they have finished the work God intended them to do", Mrs Grey answered.

"I guess the people were pretty glad when all the nasty frogs died, Mummy", Linnet remarked.

"Not that you could notice, dear. You see a living frog may be unpleasant but a dead one can be still worse. The frogs all died and they lay just where they did, and what a smell there was. The people had to stop all work and gather up dead frogs, and then the question was what to do with them. Some of them tried burning them, but that made the smell worse. At last they had to dig great ditches and bury them. In Egypt the weather gets very hot and the frogs started to decay. The people would never forget that plague of frogs, at least not till something worse came."

“There never is a plague of frogs now, is there Mummy?” Linnet asked. God never punishes people that way does He?”

“Well, darling, people do not always realise God’s punishments for what they are. They are apt to be like the Egyptians and think that it was just something that happened to them. That was the way the people of Egypt felt. Every year there are great plagues in different parts of the world yet the people do not realise that God is punishing them for not serving Him. I can remember several plagues of that sort. When I was quite young we had a plague of army caterpillars that lasted three years and ate every green leaf till in July it looked like a winter day for there was not a green leaf or a blade of grass to be seen. Then another year we had a plague of cutworms. Your sisters will remember that. They even ate the potatoes out of the ground, and the next year we had a small reminder of the plague of frogs in millions of the tiny creatures that swarmed everywhere. I believe they proved very useful for they destroyed the remainder of the cutworms, but they were very unpleasant. If you went out at night you could not help stepping on them. No one realised that those things were sent by God to remind them that they were not serving Him.”

“But are they really God’s punishment for our sins, Mummy?”

“They are part of the evil day in which we live and we have His promise that He will take them all away when He sets up His Kingdom, dear. He says, ‘I will restore every year that the canker and palmerworm have eaten, my great army that I sent among you.’ If we are really doing our best to serve Him we will know that they are not meant as a punishment for us but for the world that knows not God.”

“Did the king let the people go, Mummy?”

“No, Linnet. He was like a little boy I heard of once. He had been told never to climb up on the shed roof, and one day he did, and when he started to get down he found his trousers had caught on a nail and he could not move. The shed was some distance from the house and it was getting late and he could not get loose. He knew there was no use calling so he tugged and pulled. It began to get dark and he was afraid of the dark so he got quite frightened. He thought, ‘Suppose I should never be able to get away and no one found me. I might die here.’ Then he started to pray as his mother had taught him, ‘Please God, help me. If you will just let me get loose I will be a good boy. I will do what Mamma tells me to always. Please let me go. Oh, please let me go!’ and just then he heard a rip and began to slide. Did he thank God do you think? Indeed he did not. He said, ‘Oh never mind now, Lord. My pants tore.’

Linnet laughed heartily. “Was that what Pharaoh said, Mummy?”

Then it was Mummy’s turn to laugh. “No, Linnet, but he did say ‘Well now all the frogs are gone and I was silly to tell those fellows I would let the people go. I am sure nothing could be worse than those frogs, so I will just make them work harder to pay for the trouble I have had.’

“What did Moses do then, Mummy?”

“When Pharaoh broke his word again, God said to Moses, ‘Stretch out your rod over the land and the dust will turn to lice – nasty little biting insects that swarmed over the

people and animals. They made them feel dirty and they bit them. Pharaoh's wise men tried to do that too but they found they could not and they said to the king, 'You had better let those people go. This is the finger of the great God.' But Pharaoh was angry and he hated the nasty crawling insects and said, 'I will not let them go. They cannot do this to me.' Then God told Moses to tell the king He would send larger insects – stinging flies that would swarm all over the land and in the houses and bite the people and the animals, but to prove that it was really a punishment from God, the flies would not go near the Children of Israel for God would separate His own people from them.

"Pharaoh refused to obey God and the flies were sent. It seems that they were not flies as we would call them but small stinging beetles which were especially trying to the Egyptians because of the fact that one of their gods had a beetle head. So this plague was a reproof for their worship of such a god. The beetles or flies bit and stung the people and animals till the people were nervous and weary. Pharaoh sent again for Moses and said 'Go and sacrifice to your God but sacrifice here in Egypt. Do not leave the country.'

"Moses replied, 'We could not hold our sacrifices in the land of Egypt for our sacrifices consist of a bull or a lamb. You know that such sacrifices, if made here, would cause a riot and the Egyptians would stone us for they consider the bull to be a sacred animal, while they count the sheep as something inferior. That is why we must go three days' journey into the wilderness to sacrifice and worship our God.'

"Then Pharaoh said, 'Very well, I will let you go, only first ask your God to take the flies away.'

"Aaron, speaking as Moses commanded, said, 'We will entreat God to take this plague also from you, only do not again break your word or God will send a worse evil upon you.'"

"Did those two plagues also picture a plague that would come to people now, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear one. But it is not always possible to say just what they pictured. Since the lice troubled everyone they would seem to mean some trouble or annoyance that would affect both true children of God and the worldly people. The flies only troubled the Egyptians and did not bother the Israelites. They would then be some annoyance that would only both those who did not know or serve God. Those who love God and serve Him escape many trials. Some day we will know and understand just what these pictures meant. Being beetles and like their false god, they might simply picture false religions and teachings that would annoy the worldly people and trouble them but which the true children of God would not worry about because they serve Him."

"Did the king keep his promise then, Mummy?"

"No, dear. You know the mosquitoes are very troublesome and annoy us when they are biting, but after they are gone we do not worry about them. The flies were all carried away that night so the king forgot his promise. One good thing was accomplished. While the flies were biting, the people did not have time to drive the Children of Israel and they began to feel that it was a judgment for their cruelty so they left them alone. Now God said He would send a plague that would cost the country something. He sent word that because the king had broken his promise all the animals in Egypt would take a very

severe disease and many would die. The cattle and animals of the people of Israel would not take sick. Well, God kept His promise and thousands of cattle died. Pharaoh was very angry when he saw that the sickness did not affect the Israelites' animals. But he would not let the people go.

"Then God said to Moses, 'Take some ashes in your hand and go to the king and tell him that I will cause it to turn into boils that will break out on all the people if he still disobeys my word.' So Moses went to the king and told him that if he did not let the people go he would scatter the ashes and they would cause great boils that would break out on him and his people. Pharaoh paid no attention, so the boils were sent. The king was very sick and miserable. He sent for his magicians to come and cure him, but they too had boils and sent word that they were too sick to come.

"The king's misery put him in a worse humour than ever. Next, God told Moses to tell the people of Israel to gather all their sheep and cattle and take them into their own land and keep them separate from those of the Egyptians for God was going to send a terrible storm with thunder and lightning that would be likely to kill all animals left out in it. This storm would only strike the land where the Egyptians lived. All the Children of Israel had been forced to live in Goshen, the country given to Joseph for them.

"The storm came as God said it would, and never had there been such a thunderstorm. Great fireballs fell and rolled along the ground, setting fire to crops and buildings and killing cattle in the fields. The hailstones that fell were immense. The thunder crashed and rolled till it sounded as if the world were exploding around their ears. The Egyptians became terribly frightened. The king was still suffering from the boils for he had not sent for Moses to cure them, and his own doctors could not. Now the terrible storm frightened the king so that he sent for Moses and Aaron in a hurry. The servants of the king ran, trembling and frightened, through the storm to find them and tell them the king wished to see them.

"Pharaoh was trembling. He really thought he and all the people would be killed by that storm. When Moses came he cried, 'I have sinned against you and your God. Please ask Him to stop this terrible storm before we are all killed. I will let you and the people of Israel go.'

"Moses looked at him in disgust. A bully is always a coward and Pharaoh was whimpering like a frightened puppy. Aaron said, 'I know you do not mean that for it is only fear that makes you say it. I will ask God to stop the storm for you but I know you will not keep your promise. As soon as I get out of the city I will lift my hand to God and He will cause the storm to cease.'

"So Moses left the king and went out. He was not afraid of the storm for he knew that God was with him. Aaron was not afraid either. Together they walked through the city streets. They rejoiced in the great power of God that could cause such a storm and yet keep His people safe through it all."

"Did the storm stop when Moses asked God to stop it, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. When Moses and Aaron were outside the city gates Moses asked God to let the storm cease, and at once the hail stopped and the clouds broke and let the sun shine through. The clouds rolled slowly away and the sky was blue and beautiful again.



Everywhere there were burning houses and fields and trees torn up by the storm, but the world looked bright and clean as it always does after a heavy rain. Soon the black clouds disappeared and the kin began to get over his fear, but not over his temper. The boils were still hurting and he was ashamed to have let Moses see him so frightened. His shame made him more ugly than ever.

“Moses did not make any mistake in his opinion of Pharaoh for as soon as the storm passed away and the thunder and lightning and hail were gone Pharaoh again refused to let God’s people go free.”

“Did the storm harm the Children of Israel, Mummy, and do you know what it pictured?”

“Two questions in one. No, dear, the storm was only in the part of Egypt where the Israelites were not allowed to live. It had a meaning we can understand. You see, water always means truth and rain is truth from heaven, so hail, which is frozen water, would be hard, cold truths that hurt people. There was a terrible storm, and storms always picture trouble, so the picture of that plague could only be that there would be a time of great trouble on the earth after Jesus came to save His true people and that during that time of trouble hard, cold truths from God would hurt the feelings of the people on earth. There was lightning and thunder also, and lightning pictures truths that light up the earth and show up the evil and darkness.”

“Has there ever been a time like that, Mummy?”

“Indeed there has, dear one. The world has been suffering from that storm of trouble for some time and there have been hard, cutting truths given to the people of the world that have showed them the darkness and evil of the world and have hurt and injured many people. Of course, these truths have not hurt God’s children. It is said there is nothing that hurts like the truth. But the truth that hurts is truth about the wrong in your heart. If someone says something mean about you and you know it is not true, it will make you angry but it will not hurt you. If it is true, however, it will hurt you. Now God’s children are trying to live close to Him and to do what is right. They know God’s truth and love it so the hailstorm cannot hurt them. When we believe something that is not true and are sinning against God because of that belief and someone tries to show us that our belief is wrong and is the cause of evil deeds in our life, we are pretty sure to get very angry and to be hurt, at least in our feelings. So the truth God has given has showed the people of the world that they have believed falsehoods and have been led into sin, but they like the way they have been living and they are too proud to admit that they might be wrong. It makes them very angry to be told that they have brought the trouble upon themselves because they would not study and obey God’s Word. They are like the child at school who has been cheating at her lessons all the time. If someone tells on her she hates the one who told, not just because they did tell but because she knew all the time she was doing wrong and is angry to be caught at it and shown up.”

“I see what you mean, Mummy. It’s always best to do right, then we do not need to be afraid of the storm”, Linnet said thoughtfully. “Were there any more plagues after that, Mummy?”

“Yes, my pet, there were but it is too late to tell you of them all tonight so we will leave the rest for tomorrow night. You must go to sleep and I must go down to see Daddy. Goodnight, dear.”

Mrs Grey stooped over her little girl for a goodnight kiss and Linnet said, "Is there a verse with that lesson, Mummy?"

"I think I can give you a good one that will help you to remember our talk. *'Men loved darkness rather than light because their deeds were evil.'* That is John 3:19. You may read it for yourself sometime.

### **Chapter 18: Added Plagues.**

"Mummy", said Linnet the following evening as she and Mother were washing up the dinner dishes together. "We had a story in school this afternoon that reminded me of the plague of the beetles in Egypt." Linnet and her mother had the house to themselves as the older children had gone out that evening.

"What was it about, Linnet" Mother asked.

"It was about a little boy who lived all alone in a beautiful garden and was very happy but he was very lonesome. The gods sent him a little girl for a playmate. He had a box that had been left in his care. It was all carved in a beautiful pattern and tied with a cord. He had been warned never to open it, for if he did it would bring him much trouble. The little boy never opened it but the little girl got very curious and at last, when the boy was out playing, she opened it. A lot of nasty stinging insects flew out. They bit the little girl and everyone else too. Teacher said they were the little troubles that make people unhappy."

"The story of Pandora's box", Mrs Grey answered. "Yes, dear, it does remind one of the plague of beetles that troubled the people of Egypt."

"Is it a true story, Mummy?"

"No, dear. It is a fable, a story with a meaning, and it is a very pretty one too. It was told by the ancient Greeks to their children before Jesus was born."

"There were other plagues that you did not tell me about yet, Mummy. What were they?" Linnet asked.

"There were ten plagues in all, dear, and I told you about seven last night. The water turned to blood, the frogs, the lice, and the flies or beetles. Then there was the sickness of the animals and the plague of boils that made the people so ill, and then last one was the terrible storm. After the storm had passed away, God spoke to Moses again and said, 'Go to Pharaoh, for I have made his heart stubborn and hard and he will refuse to let you go. I wish to punish him and all the nation of Egypt for the evil things they have done and to prove to all men that I am the true God. Tell Pharaoh that I am going to send locusts to destroy all the crops in Egypt.'

"What are locusts, Mummy?"

"They are large grasshoppers that eat everything. In the prairie country and in China they still have plagues of locusts or grasshoppers at times. In the East the people eat the locusts and use them in many ways. They cook them and eat them as we do shrimps, or dry them and make a sort of flour of them that they use in cooking. The people always

welcome a few locusts but this time they came like a great black cloud and simply covered the ground like a blanket. They ate every green thing and even the fence posts and the handles off tools. Pharaoh's wise men went to him and begged him to obey the demands of the God of Israel before the whole country should be destroyed. Pharaoh sent for Moses and asked, 'Who is it that wants to go to serve this God of yours?'

"Moses answered, 'We must all go and we must take all our animals also, for we cannot tell just how many we will need to sacrifice and to have a great feast.'

"Then the king said, 'You men can go by yourselves but you must not take your families or animals with you. Now get out of my sight.' Then he drove Moses and Aaron out in his anger.

"As soon as they were safely outside the palace Aaron lifted up the rod at Moses' command and at once a strong wind began to blow. It blew all night and in the morning the people saw a large and very black cloud coming up. As it came nearer it seemed to blot out the sun. It was not a cloud but millions of locusts that lighted everywhere till the country was black with them. They ate everything the hail had left.

"Again the king sent in haste for Moses and Aaron and said, 'I have sinned against you and your God. Please entreat Him to take these terrible locusts away or we shall all starve. If you will do this you shall go and worship in peace.' Again Moses prayed, and God sent a wind that blew the locusts away, but the king went back on his word and refused to let the people go."

"How many plagues did that make, Mummy?" Linnet asked. "I lose count of them."

"The locusts made eight, dear. There were still two to come."

"Do we know what the locusts pictured, Mummy?"

"No, dear one. Perhaps it was meant to show a plague of trouble that would follow the terrible storm that would bring light and a great hail of truth to the world. It would seem from the way things have been going that this storm of trouble might have been the Great War that came before you were born. If that was the case, the locusts might well be a picture of the great period of depression that came some years ago and which darkened the world as the locusts darkened the skies in Egypt and which caused much loss to the worldly people. The next plague is easily understood, for it was a time of thick darkness, and this is prophesied for our days. This darkness was very great and not even the lamps could brighten it. The people of Egypt just had to stay in bed for they could not see to go anywhere. In Israel there was light, however. This would show that the world would lose the light of God's Word but His true people would still have it."

"Was that the same time Jesus meant when He said the sun and moon would be darkened, Mummy? You told me that meant that people would not have the light of God's Word."

"Yes, darling. The plague of darkness pictured the same thing. This darkness is over a great part of the world today for in some countries, even in various parts of Europe, people are not allowed to study the Bible, but those who know God's Word cannot be in

darkness for the light is in their hearts and no one can take it from them. Even if all our Bibles were taken from us we would still know all about God's Plan.

"Pharaoh sent again for Moses and the messenger must have had a hard time finding him in the dark. Moses went to the king's palace, however. The gloom was so thick that Pharaoh could not see Moses. He heard the voice of Aaron, however, and said, 'Go and take your people to serve their God but leave all your possessions here so I will know that you will come back.'

"Moses said, 'That won't do. We must take all our herds with us for we do not know just how much we will need for sacrifices.'

"Pharaoh said, 'All right, you shall stay right here in Egypt for I will not let you go. Now get out of my sight for I tell you the next time you see my face you will die.'

"Moses replied, 'You have spoken truly. You will never see my face again.'"

"Was Moses going away then, Mummy?"

"In a very short time. He left Pharaoh and went back to the land of Goshen where the Israelites were living. Then God spoke to Moses again and said, 'Tell the Children of Israel to borrow everything they can from the Egyptians. They will lend them anything they ask for because they are afraid of them. Tell them also to take a young lamb, a male not over a year old and one that has no blemish anywhere, and take it to their homes on the tenth day of this month. On the night of the fourteenth day of the month they must kill this lamb and roast it whole with bitter herbs. In the meantime tell them to get everything ready for a journey, pack all their goods and gather their flocks and herds, for on the night of the fourteenth of this month I will send my angel through the land of Egypt and every first-born child in every house in Egypt will die. As for you, take the blood of the lamb and sprinkle it on the doors and on the lintels of your houses, for on that night when my angel passes through Egypt he will look for the sign on the doors. When he sees the blood on the doors he will pass by that house and no one will die. Be sure and eat the lamb with your coats on and ready for a journey for Pharaoh will drive you out of Egypt this night. When the message comes you must be ready to leave at once.'

"The Children of Israel did as Moses said. They got everything ready and borrowed everything they could from the Egyptians, who were willing to give them whatever they asked for because they had become so afraid of them."

"But Mummy, it was not fair to borrow things when they knew they would not be able to pay it back."

"It would be wrong in any other case, dear, but we have to remember that the Egyptians had been making the Israelites work as slaves for many years. They had grown rich and great by the work of the people who slaved for them. They did not pay the Children of Israel a just salary for their work but forced them to do the heaviest work, giving them just enough to keep them alive. They killed their boy babies as soon as they were born and they set foremen over them who drove them like animals and beat them with their whips."

“Were there not any good people among the Egyptians, Mummy?”

“No nation is all evil, Linnet, but the policy of every nation is set by the rulers of it. Those Egyptians who really pitied and liked the Children of Israel would not obey Pharaoh’s commands. These were very kind to them and were rewarded, as we shall see. The commands of God through Moses were obeyed. Every family chose a lamb large enough to provide a meal for the family and took it into their home on the tenth day of the month.”

“Why did they have to keep it in the house, Mummy?”

“For two reasons, Linnet. First, so that they would have it handy and would not have to choose it at the last minute. But the most important part was that they were making a picture for God.”

“What was the picture, Mummy?”

“I will tell you that in its place, dear one. The lamb must be perfect and a male and not over one year old. While they had the lamb in the house they must pack all their goods that they wished to take with them and borrow all they could from their neighbours. The evening of the fourteenth day came at last and as soon as it was dark they killed the lamb.”

“Why must they wait till dark, Mummy?”

“So the Egyptians would not know of their preparation to leave and see them putting the blood on the door. You remember they were to take the blood of the lamb they killed and sprinkle it on the door-posts and lintels, that is, the board at the top of the door.”

“You told me once about a man who forgot, Mummy.”

“Yes, dear. The story is told that in one home the lamb was killed and they were cooking it, and the oldest child was troubled and said, ‘Father, are you sure that the blood is on our door?’ The father said, ‘Yes, my son. I told Ebenezer to take the blood and sprinkle it on the door as soon as we killed the lamb.’ Then the little boy said, ‘But father, suppose he forgot or was called away. The angel would not know I was one of God’s children and I would be killed. Please look and be sure, father.’ And the father went to look and found that the man had indeed forgotten. He caught up a branch and sprinkled it there himself, and so the angel, who passed a few minutes after, saw the blood and did not kill the child.

“At midnight that night the angel of God passed through the land of Egypt and every first-born child died, and the first-born of all the animals died that were still living after the storm and the sickness.”

“I cannot see why God killed the children, Mummy, when it was the king and the older people who had sinned”, Linnet said thoughtfully. “Jesus loves children.”

“Perhaps that was the reason He let them die, dear one. You see, He knew that death was just falling into a sound sleep. The children were all sleeping and they just did not wake up. They were not terribly sick and they felt no pain. God knew that there was very

little food left in Egypt and they would suffer hunger and sickness if they lived. He knew that many of their fathers would be killed shortly, as you will see, and that if they fell asleep then, they would miss a great deal of trouble. It would be a terrible punishment on those who had killed all the boy babies of the Israelites and would let them see how it felt to have their own little ones killed. He knew, too, that there was just one thing that the king cared more for than himself and that was his son. Yes, Pharaoh's own son died that night, and in every house in Egypt there was mourning.

"When the news was brought to Pharaoh that his son was dead, he sent to Moses and Moses knew that the call would come that night, and he was waiting for it. He went to the palace."

"But Mummy, he said the king would never see him again."

"He did not see him, dear. The room was dark when Moses came to the king and he only heard his voice. The king was in mourning over the death of his son. He felt that he had killed the boy himself by his stubborn folly. He said, 'Get out of this country at once, every one of you. Go at once and take your families and your herds and flocks with you. But please bless me before you go.'

"Everywhere the Egyptians were urging the Israelites to get away quickly before all the people of Egypt died. Messengers ran from house to house and the people were all ready as Moses had told them to be. They had all their goods packed in carts or on the backs of donkeys. They took unleavened bread with them, for they knew they would not be able to bake any bread on the journey. The fact that they had just finished their midnight meal of roast lamb and unleavened bread gave them strength and they did not lose a moment. Long before morning came they were travelling as fast as they could toward the Land of Canaan. When the sun rose they wondered just where they should head for and where God would wish them to go, but God had provided a guide for them. Do you remember what it was, Linnet?"

"Yes, Mummy. It was a big cloud that travelled in front of them. It looked all white and beautiful in the daytime but at night it seemed to be on fire."

"That is right, dear one. Now we will leave them travelling along the way to Canaan and take a look for a moment at the picture. I wonder if you can tell me what the lamb, pictured. Linnet."

"It was a picture of Jesus, Mummy. You told me that before."

"Yes, dear. The lamb pictured Jesus. It must be perfect, as a sign that He was perfect. It must be young and it must be roasted whole. Not a bone must be broken. So Jesus was '*Holy, harmless, undefiled and separate from sinners*' and '*None of His bones were broken.*' The blood of the lamb was to be taken and sprinkled on the door-posts as a sign that those in the house were God's children. So the Apostle Paul tells us we must have the blood of Jesus sprinkled on our hearts if we would be safe in this dark night of sin."

"How can we have Jesus' blood sprinkled on our hearts, Mummy?"

"If we really believe that we are sinners and were all condemned to die for the sin of Adam, Linnet, and that Jesus took Adam's place and died for us so that His blood was shed to save us and we are trusting in Him to give us the life He has promised, then we have the blood on our hearts. It means to be trusting in Jesus' death to give us life. The oldest child in each house in Israel was in danger of dying that night, but they knew they were safe because of the blood on the door, so we are safe because of Jesus' death. Do you understand, Linnet?"

"Yes, Mummy. I know it is because Jesus died that God has promised to give us all life in the Kingdom."

"And because you know that, Linnet, you are protected by Jesus' blood. God told Moses that from that time on every first-born son in every family in Israel was to be counted as belonging especially to God but they were not to do as the Egyptians did, offer their children as burnt offerings to God. Instead, to show they really understood that God had saved their first-born children and every first-born son belonged to Him, they were to buy that child back, or redeem it. To do this they must take a lamb, if they could afford it, or if they were poor, a dove or a pair of young pigeons, and sacrifice it in place of the child."

"Was that why Mary had to take Baby Jesus to the temple, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. At first the people remembered but after awhile they thought no more of that service than the church people do today of a christening. They had a superstitious idea that some harm would come to the baby if they did not make the sacrifice."

"Did the people get away safely, Mummy?"

"They travelled for three days in safety, dear. They did not even stop to sleep but when they got tired they climbed into the wagons and rested awhile. On the third day the cloud led them to a narrow passage between two cliffs that stood right at the edge of the Red Sea. There they camped and stopped to rest awhile. And I think it is time a certain little person I know stopped to rest for awhile too. So we will leave the rest of the story for another night. Remember this, dear one. You can always sleep and rest peacefully, for you are protected by the blood of Jesus and He will keep you safe from all harm."

"Here is a little verse for you tonight: *'Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us.'*

"Now goodnight, dear one. We have finished up all the work and you have had rather a tiring day and I must go and get Daddy all fixed up for the night. He will be wondering what is keeping me so long."

"I like helping you with the work, Mummy. The time seems to fly when you tell me a story', Linnet replied, throwing her arms around her Mother and lifting her lips for a goodnight kiss. Then she ran off to get ready for bed."

## **Chapter 19: Crossing the Red Sea**

All Israel lies at rest within the valley.  
Their long, long days of slavery are o'er,  
Their hearts are filled with praises to Jehovah.  
Each mother's heart beats high with hope once more.

On either side the rugged cliffs arising  
Lift grey and storm-scarred battlements on high  
To where the wild sea birds shrill out their protest,  
Speeding on grateful wings across the sky.

The Red Sea cradled lies in peaceful splendour.  
Beyond its waves the hills are green and still,  
While evening drives the shadows of the headlands  
Across its breast, and every tree and hill  
Entangled in the rushes lies in shadow.  
The wild ducks drift across the mirrored scene.  
The sheep, all worn out with their long forced marches,  
Lie peacefully at rest in grasses green.

Above the hills a cloud lies low. It catches  
The bright tints of the slowly setting sun.  
Within its piled up glory, never sleeping,  
He watches o'er them – God's appointed one.  
Between the cliffs the grateful, happy people,  
Late terror-stricken slaves of Egypt's king,  
Converse in groups or lie at rest. Their safety  
Assured beneath the shadow of His wing.

But lo! A voice rings through the darkening shadows,  
'The host of Pharaoh! See they come, they come!  
Why hast thou led us here to die in anguish  
By hills entrapped? The grave will be our home!"  
But Moses answers – high his faith and courage –  
"Stand still and see what God our Lord will do."

All night a mighty wind drives back the waters.  
Morning reveals unto their wondering view  
A pathway through the waves that lie before them  
Unto the safety of the other side.  
So God's great power still protects His faithful  
And saves all those who in His love abide.

How sweet when all around is fear and trouble  
To know His mercy guards on either hand.  
His love hides in the threatening cloud above us,  
Beneath the shadow of His wings we stand.  
Though Satan's evil forces still pursue us  
He'll lead us safely through the parted wave.  
The arm of the Almighty is not shortened,  
His is the power, His the will to save.

"Those are lovely verses, Mummy. Please put them in my book for me", Linnet said. Mrs Grey looked up to see her little girl standing at her elbow reading the above verses over her shoulder.

"Hello, darling. I did not hear you come in. So you like these verses, eh? Very well, I will put them in your book so you can have a copy of them."

It was a Sunday afternoon and Linnet had been outside with her little chums sitting in the shade of the old apple tree. They had been discussing the great truths of God's Word,



for though her little friends were regular attendants of the Sunday Schools they had learned to come to her for information on many subjects and looked on her as an authority.

“Where are your little friends, Linnet?” Mrs Grey asked.

“They both had to go home, Mummy. Jennie’s mother is taking her for a long trip out into the country to see some friends and Elizabeth’s mummy wanted her to go with her to see a ball game. Elizabeth did not want to go. She said she would rather stay with me and talk but her mother did not want to go alone. Mummy, it is so nice to have my little friends both looking for the Kingdom. Jennie says she can hardly wait for it. She says she really believes the things I have told her.”

“You are doing a real missionary work, dear one. I know how much you love to tell your friends of the Kingdom. They are such sweet little children, too.”

“Mary is the only one who won’t listen, Mummy. She is very smug and thinks that unless we belong to her church we will go to a terrible place and be burned up in a fire, and she is so spiteful sometimes I think she would really enjoy seeing us there.”

“Mary just reflects the things she hears others say. If she had been taught as you have, dear one, she would not be like that. You must try and be patient with her but I am really glad that you are not better friends, for Mary is not the kind of a companion I would choose for you. Did you finish reading the verses, dear?”

“Yes, Mummy. They are about the Children of Israel. That is the story you were telling me. Could you tell me a little more now that we are all alone.”

“I guess I could, dear one. Daddy is resting and the children are all out this afternoon. Was there something in particular you wished to know?”

“You said that the Egyptians who were kind to the Children of Israel were rewarded for their kindness. How, Mummy?”

“Well, darling, suppose you, who are God’s child, know that a great disaster was about to come and that your little friends who love to hear of God were in danger. Suppose you knew that there was safety and protection in your home, what would you do?”

“I would coax them to come to our house where they would be safe, Mummy.”

“That is just what the Israelites did, Linnet. Those who had been very good and kind to them they would invite to their homes for that supper, and so they would be under the protection of the blood.”

“Does the Bible tell us they did, Mummy?”

“Not in just those words, Linnet, but it does tell us that when they left Egypt that night there were many people with them who were not of their own tribes. As they left their homes in the night-time and in secret these people must have been with them. These people went with them on their journey to Canaan and shared their trials and blessings, and by their close friendship with the people of God escaped many of the plagues,

perhaps all the last ones. I told you last night how they camped by the Red Sea, between the cliffs. The cloud overshadowed them and God watched over them. Some of them climbed the cliffs to have a better view of the country around them, and it was these who saw, far away in the distance, a swiftly approaching band of horsemen. The setting sun shone on the spears and shields and revealed them to be soldiers. They shouted to their friends in the valley below and told them that the hosts of Pharaoh were following them.

“You can imagine how frightened the people were. They seemed to be hopelessly trapped. The Red Sea was in front of them and the high cliffs on each side, and the armies of Pharaoh were following them. They ran to Moses and asked him why he had led them there to let the king’s soldiers trap and kill them all.

“Moses replied, ‘Stand still and you will see the salvation of God. Those Egyptians whom you see following you today, you will never see them again for God is going to fight for you.’

“Then God spoke to Moses out of the cloud and told him to go down to the edge of the water and stretch his rod over the sea. When Moses obeyed, the cloud left the hilltop and went back and stood between the Children of Israel and their enemies. The side that was nearest the Israelites was bright and lit up the whole camp but on the other side it was black and there was a great storm, so that Pharaoh’s army could go no farther. All night a very high wind blew and when the people wakened up in the morning they found that a sandbar stretched right across the sea at that place and the high wind had blown the water back off the sandbar and dried it so that it stretched like a roadway right through the sea. They drove their sheep and cattle ahead of them. Of course, the Egyptians could not see through the cloud to see where they were going and did not know that God had opened a path for His people. They thought they would catch them all there between the cliffs. Imagine their surprise when they got to the seashore, travelling slowly because of the storm, to find the Children of Israel climbing up the hills on the other side of the sea, and there was the pathway they had taken. The soldiers wanted to turn back and let them go but the king was determined to punish them and made them go back and slave for him again. He ordered the soldiers to go after them and, of course, being soldiers, they had to obey. I think you know what happened, Linnet, do you not?”

“Yes, Mummy. Moses waited till they were all in the sea, then God told him to stretch out his rod and when he did the water rolled back and they were all drowned.”

“That is just what happened, Linnet. The wind changed and the water began to flow back again. At first, very slowly, so that the sand became wet and soft and they sank in it.”

“Just like it is at the beach when the tide is coming in, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear. Just like that. You know how it steals in around you and the water washes over your castle, and then along comes a wave and you have to scramble higher up the beach to find a dry place. But there was no dry place. The Egyptians tried to reach the shore but very few did. Some could swim and reach safety on the side they had come from, but the wicked king and most of his army were drowned.

"Now the Children of Israel were safe on the hills. They had seen the power of God conquer. All their enemies were gone. They could travel where they would now and need not fear anyone."

"Was that a picture too, Mummy?" Linnet asked.

"A very wonderful and beautiful picture, and one that may have two meanings. First, it shows how those who persist in trying to hurt God's people will be completely destroyed in the new day when God has set up His Kingdom on earth. The Red Sea has the same meaning as the black pool in your picture puzzle.

"It has another meaning, however. The escape of the Children of Israel from the Angel of Death showed how all who are really God's children have escaped death during the Gospel Age, or the dark night on earth, by trusting in Jesus. So the Red Sea shows that the people of the world will come to a great time of trouble at the end of this age. The cloud of trouble that is over the world today is like the cloud that protected the Children of Israel. To God's children who know that Jesus is in that cloud setting up His Kingdom, the cloud is full of light and brightens up the world so they can prepare for the Kingdom by getting all the knowledge of truth they can. They will be saved from the sea of anarchy by taking God's pathway through it. The Egyptians will try to use that path too, but the water will cover them."

"What is anarchy, Mummy?"

"It is a period when no one has control, Linnet. When Satan has lost his power and Jesus has not fully taken His. When the governments of this world will be overthrown and people will do as they please. Pharaoh pictured Satan and the soldiers pictured his wicked angels, whom God will destroy. That time was pictured by the Red Sea, and all the people of this world will go through that time of trouble and those who are following Jesus will go through it safely but all of the things that belong to this age will be destroyed. When the trouble is over, Satan and his hosts will have no power to hurt or harm anyone. All the people who remain will be under the righteous rule of Jesus and He will teach them and lead them to the Kingdom."

"I guess the people were pretty glad to be free from the wicked old king's rule, were they not, Mummy?"

"Indeed they were. Miriam and her maidens took musical instruments and played and sang a song Moses had written. The words were something like this –

'Come now and let us sing our praises to our King.  
Jehovah is a tower of strength and grace.  
He hath our footsteps kept – He who has never slept –  
Salvation He has given to our race.'

"Then all the people joined in the chorus –

'Sing ye to Jehovah, Oh sound ye His praises.  
Behold He hath triumphed right gloriously.  
The hills sound the might of the Ancient of Days  
Who o'erthrew our foes in the depths of the sea.'

“Verse after verse was sung by the people –

‘He is our God, our song, we will to Him belong  
A mighty God and man of war is He,  
The oppressor is no more, for God has plagued him sore,  
And o’er his hosts has triumphed gloriously.

‘His Logos in this hour is glorious in power,  
Thine arm Oh God, Thy messenger is He.  
For He our lives did shield, nor would Thy people yield  
To be devoured by the enemy.

‘The waters at Thy word, recede Oh Mighty Lord.  
The very floods stood upward in a heap.  
For when Thou barest Thine arm, Thy loved ones fear no harm,  
Since Thou art strong Thy covenant to keep.

‘Our enemy was led to where he lieth dead.  
The mighty floods have washed our foes away.  
They hand to Egypt gave a cold and watery grave.  
Our eyes have seen Thy mighty works this day.

‘Who is there like to Thee, who workest wondrously,  
Fearful in justice and in strength art Thou.  
Thou woundest Egypt sore, her minions are no more,  
The fear of Thee shall conquer all men now.

‘None may stand in Thy way who brought us here this day,  
To plant us in Thine own inheritance.  
Our Sanctuary, Thou, before Thee we will bow,  
And yield to Thee our heart-felt reverence.

‘Oh sing ye to the Lord and magnify His Word.  
Praise now and adoration let us bring.  
He led us all the way, we will be His for aye,  
And own Jehovah as our God and King.’

“That was the song the people sang, not only then but often in the days that followed. Of course, they sang it in their own language and there was really much more to it. We do not know the tune they sang but we do know that all the world will sing a song like that when the Kingdom is fully established and all this time of trouble is over. Then all who have been safely carried through the sea of anarchy will join in that song and will give themselves to God and serve Him faithfully, for they will then have to obey the great King.

“Now little daughter, that is the end of that picture and it is time to get supper. We might take part of Moses’ song for our verse today and try to remember it. *‘The Lord is my strength and my song, and He has become my salvation.’*”

“How is that put in the verses you read me. Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“*He is our strength, our song, we will to Him belong*”, Mrs Grey answered. Then she gave her little daughter a quick squeeze and a kiss and hurried off to prepare the evening meal for her family.

## Chapter 20: In the Wilderness

How fair Thy Word becomes, Oh, Lord – how good –  
When all its scenes and types are understood.  
My heart, responding to Thy wondrous grace  
Would humbly kneel and wait Thy Word of Peace.  
The types and scenes I seek to put in rhyme  
Are foretastes of Thy mighty deeds of time.  
Forgive me if my work does not excel  
As I Thine allegories seek to tell.  
The pictures, scenes and types, Oh Lord, are Thine,  
The weak and poor phraseology is mine.

Through Israel's wanderings in the wilderness  
Are pictures that – when understood – will bless  
And show Thy wondrous wisdom to our race,  
Till all mankind shall bow before Thy face.  
Leaving the sea of anarchy they ascend the hills of peace.  
With evil overcome it seems their trials soon will cease;  
But three days pass in wanderings where no water is found.  
Both men and cattle search in vain the dry and parched ground.  
At Mara then they find a well – bitter and poisonous –  
And cry against their leader, 'Why have you used us thus?'  
At God's behest he seeks a tree, which in the water placed,  
Restores its sweetness – what a type of God's unfailing grace.

For when the Firstborns' pass beyond into the realms of light  
There comes a time when truth is hid as in the darkest night.  
Truth's waters then cannot be found because the Church is gone,  
And men will feel the need of it in the Millennial Dawn.  
The Word of God at last unearthed is bitter in excess,  
For leaders false have poisoned it. It cannot heal and bless.  
But when the tree – the cross of Christ, His ransom sacrifice,  
Is there replaced, the truth grows pure and will their needs suffice.

From 'Types and Shadows'

"I am so tired, Mummy. Teacher took us for a hike today. It was lots of fun. But we walked and walked, right up to the top of Outlook Hill. We saw the prettiest flowers and the scene is beautiful from there. I wish you could have been with us. We could see away up the coast and we could look down on the town and the houses looked like a toy village", Linnet said one fine evening the following week. "I guess the Children of Israel must have been terribly tired after walking for three days when a walk of two hours could play me out like this."

"You can sympathise with them then, Linnet. Yes, I guess they were pretty tired after such a long walk. It reminded you of our story, did it?" Mrs Grey asked, then added, "I noticed something else that reminded me of our story, Linnet."

"What was that, Mummy?"

"The first thing you did when you got home was to go to the tap and get a nice big drink of cold water."

"I was thirsty, Mummy. But I don't see what they had to do with our story."

"Well, dear, after the Children of Israel had rested beside the Red Sea for a few hours they started on their way and they walked and walked for another three days through country that was very dry. They hunted and hunted for water and could not find any. Perhaps they had brought some with them but that was soon gone and it would have been impossible to carry water for their thousands of sheep and cattle. By the end of those three days they were simply terribly thirsty. Then they came to a fine well, The water looked so good to them but when they tasted it they found it was bitter and poisonous."

"That would be terrible, Mummy! It would be almost worse than not finding any."

"That was the way they felt, Linnet. They scolded and growled and complained like a bunch of spoiled children. They went to Moses and said, 'Why did you ever bring us into this terrible country anyway? We shall all die of thirst. At least we had lots of water in Egypt.' Then Moses went to God and said to Him, 'What can I do for them, Lord? They are really suffering from the lack of water and this water is terrible. They cannot drink it.'

"God answered Moses, as He always answers His children when they go to Him in trouble, 'Do you see that tree over there Moses? Go and cut it down and put it in the water and it will be all right for their use.'"

What good would the tree do, Mummy? I should think putting a tree in the water would make it worse."

"Under most circumstances it would, Linnet. But God was making a picture and He intended to make the water pure and sweet for the people. Moses obeyed. He had learned never to question God but to obey Him no matter how strange the command might seem. As soon as the tree was put into the water of the well, the water became pure and good and the people all had a nice drink, and then they camped there to rest. They watered all the animals and then turned them loose to eat the grass and herbs. Then God spoke to Moses again and said, 'Say to the people, If you will obey my laws and do as I command you I will not let you suffer from any of the diseases which the people of Egypt had. I am the Lord and I will heal you.'

"I wonder, Linnet, if you can tell me what the picture of the well meant?"

"Water is always truth, Mummy, but I cannot see how the truth could be poison", Linnet said thoughtfully.

"This picture showed, dearest, that after the trouble is over there will be a time when the people will not have the truth of God's Word. He will withhold it from them for a time so they will get really thirsty for it. Do you remember the verse you learned this morning about those who hunger and thirst?"

"*Blessed are those who hunger and thirst after righteousness for they shall be filled*', Linnet quoted. "You said that meant to really want to know the truth and to have God's Word, Mummy."

"Yes, darling. The people of this world have had God's Word for many years and they did not value it. You remember the picture showed that it became unpleasant to them, turned to blood, because they could not understand the meaning of the sacrifices and the prophecies in it. Well, when this trouble is over the people will begin to think about God's Word and how it has been fulfilled and they will think of how sweet and pure and good the truth is, just as the people of Israel began to think how fine that water was, when they could not get it. Perhaps the three days picture three years when there will be no truth to be had, but we cannot be sure. All God's true children, who are pictured by the first-born, will have been saved and taken to be with God but there will be many left on earth who will have the love of God in their hearts. They will not be permitted to teach the truth till the people begin to feel really thirsty for it. Then the people will find the well of water, that is, the places where they can get the truth, but the false teachings of the churches during this time will have made them think the water is bitter and poisonous."

"You mean that they will not like the Bible because of the wrong teachings about it, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. You see, some think that the Bible teaches that when people die they go either to heaven or to a terrible place of punishment. They think that God is cruel and terrible. When the trouble is over and peace has come they will think about all their dear ones who were killed in the trouble and the truth that the Kingdom has come will make them feel how unjust it was that their loved ones had to be killed and cannot enjoy the blessings. Then Jesus, whom Moses pictured, will show them the truth about His ransom sacrifice and how He died in place of Adam so that everyone who died might be raised from the dead and given a share in the blessings. Then the truth will become sweet and beautiful to the mourning people and they will be able to drink it and it will refresh them and give them strength."

"Mummy, I do so hope I can help in teaching the people the wonderful truths that we know", Linnet said.

"Now is your chance to learn all you can so you will be ready for that work when the time comes", Mrs Grey answered. "You will know that there will be a short time when you will not be able to tell the people about those things. They will think the truth is bitter and unpleasant. During that time, keep it alive in your own heart by thinking about it. Then you may be able to help put the tree in the water and make it sweet and pure."

"Did they stay there at the well, Mummy?"

"No, dear. They had to travel on to the Promised Land. So the people of the world will have to keep on travelling on and up to perfection. Now another trial came to them. They ran out of food. Of course, there were lots of the big locusts and snails they liked to cook and eat and there were wild roots and grass for the cattle, and they had all their cattle and flocks and could kill some of their animals for food so they were in no real danger of starving. The big trouble was that they had always used bread as their chief food and they had used up all the flour they had brought with them. So they began to grumble again. They said, 'When we were in Egypt we had lots of bread and now we have no flour to make any. What are we going to have to eat? We want bread.'

"Then God said to Moses, 'I will send down bread like rain from heaven to feed these people. They shall gather it every day and I will prove whether they will obey me or not.

Tomorrow morning there will be bread on the ground and the people must gather just enough to do them for one day. Each day they must gather a day's supply, but on the sixth day of the week they must gather enough for two days for there will be none on the seventh day.'

"Moses and Aaron called the people together and said to them, 'Tomorrow morning you will see the glory of God, for He has heard your complaints against Him, for you are not murmuring against us but against God. The Lord has said He will send you meat to eat in the evening and bread in the morning. Come here then to the cloud wherein God is watching over you.'

"As the people came nearer to where the cloud hovered like a protecting angel over them, they saw it suddenly light up as if it was on fire and they could hear a voice speaking from it, but only Moses could tell what the voice said. The words he heard were, 'I have heard your complaints against me. Say unto them, At evening you shall have flesh to eat and in the morning you shall have bread so that you may know I am the Lord who have brought you up from Egypt.'

"When the evening came they saw clouds of quail – a large, wild bird like a hen – flying low over the camp. They seemed to have flown a long way and to be very tired for when they came over the camp they fell exhausted on the ground and the people caught and killed and cooked them. The next morning they went out early, as soon as the sun had come up and the dew began to dry, and they found that the ground was covered with small round white things that looked like frost or snow. They said, 'What is it?', only in the Hebrew language the word for 'what is it' is 'Manna.' From then on they called this bread 'Manna'. Moses said to them, 'This is the bread God promised you. Gather it carefully and be sure you just gather enough to do you for one day. There will be more tomorrow.'

"So the people gathered the manna in jars, carefully. It was round and white like small seeds and it tasted like cakes made with flour and honey. Moses told the people to gather a pot of it to keep so that they might show it to their children in days to come. Now there was a strange thing about this manna. Every morning they were to gather a day's supply. But many of the people did not fully trust God so they tried to gather a lot of it, but when they came to measure it they found they had just the same as everyone else. Then some of them thought, 'How do we know that there will more tomorrow?' so they only used a little bit and put the rest away to use the next day. But when they went to get it in the morning they found it was full of worms and smelled terrible."

"How could they keep it to show their children, Mummy, if it would not keep for even one day?" Linnet asked.

"That was another strange thing about it. The pot they gathered to keep never spoiled. When the sixth day came Moses said to the people, 'Today you must gather enough manna for two days for tomorrow is the seventh day and there will be no manna then. You will have to use what you have left over from today.' Of course, some of the people who had tried to keep it before paid no attention and only gathered enough for one day and when they went to look for some on the seventh day there was none at all and they had to do without. They soon learned that what they gathered on the sixth day would keep over their sabbath or rest day.



"When they learned that lesson they were more obedient. So God wished the people to learn to obey Him. He wished them to understand that He would provide each day what they really needed. Do you know, dear, what the manna pictured?"

"You told me once that it was a picture of Jesus, Mummy", Linnet answered, "But I cannot see how it could picture Him."

"Jesus said, '*I am the manna that came down from heaven. Your fathers ate manna in the wilderness and they are dead, but whoever eats of the bread I will give him will live forever. The bread I will give is my flesh which I will give for the life of the world.*' Do you remember what they meant, Linnet?"

"No, Mummy. I cannot remember."

"Jesus gave his earthly body to give us life. Bread is the life-giving food. So Jesus' human body was to be like bread to us and to be given to keep us alive. The people had to gather the manna and eat it before it could give them life and strength. What do we have to do before Jesus can give us life, Linnet?"

"We have to believe in Him and trust Him, Mummy."

"Yes, dear. So when we read God's Word and learn about Jesus we are gathering the Manna. Then when we realise that it is true that Jesus died to save us and to give us life and we believe that He will really give it to us in the Kingdom if we obey His laws, and then we try our best to please Him, that is eating the Manna for we are taking Jesus' sacrifice to ourselves and making it ours. If we do that we will become more like Jesus and will be His, and He can give us the life He has promised. So you can see why the manna is such a good picture of Jesus, Linnet, can you not?"

"Yes, Mummy, and I am eating that manna too."

"That is what you must do, dear one. There is another thing I might mention. When God made the water pure for the people He told them that if they would obey Him and do His will He would heal them and take away all their illness and that none of the diseases of the Egyptian people would come to them. That meant that when Jesus has taught the people the truth about His sacrifice and how those who die had to sleep till He wakened them up and then they would share the blessings in His Kingdom, He will offer them health if they will obey His laws. Then all the sicknesses that people of this world now have will be taken away, if they obey. Those who will not obey will be punished, as the pictures show that follow this one.

"Now here is a little verse I want you to learn and remember, dear. It is the words of Jesus: '*My flesh I give for the life of the world.*' Now I hear someone calling you, so one of your friends must have come back and wants to play. You may run along now and I will get supper. Do not go far away though dear, for I will give you a call when supper is ready."

## **Chapter 21: Israel at Sinai.**

The rising sun shines o'er the wilderness,  
And what a strange assemblage it views;

There where yon mountain rears its stately breast,  
A myriad tents, widespread like drifts of snow  
Tinted with gold from morning's earliest beams,  
As though the sun of springtime warm had been,  
Melting in rivulets and wandering streams  
The close-packed snows of winter, so between  
The tents lie dark, brown areas of earth.  
All cluster round a central edifice  
Like petals round the chalice of a flower.  
Strangely that striking scene lies there for us,  
Revealing to our hearts God's present power.

"It is so nice to have Daddy able to be with us for supper, Mummy", Linnet said that evening. Mr Grey was at last sufficiently recovered to be present at the table again and everyone felt in a festive mood as a result.

Mrs Grey smiled down at the eager little face. "We are all very thankful, darling, that our Heavenly Father has seen fit to leave him with us for awhile longer", she said. Supper was over and they were washing up the dishes together while Daddy rested after the unusual exertion. "Daddy will be able to have a nice long rest from his heavy work. I am hoping things will be easier and more pleasant for him when he does have to start back to the office again."

"You said once that God would see he got a rest when it was needed, Mummy. I guess that was why Daddy had to be ill. It was lovely to have him around and hear him joking and laughing. It makes me feel like singing."

"It has been rather a trying time for us all, dearest, and you have been very thoughtful and kind. Now we can have more time together for Daddy is able to read and write letters again and so he will not need Mother so much. It has been good for us all, for we have had a chance to develop patience and thoughtfulness too."

"Can you tell me a little more of our story while I dry the dishes for you, Mummy?"

"I surely can, dear. Where did we leave the Israelites last; do you remember?"

"Yes, Mummy. They had just found the bitter water and God had sent them Manna and chickens to eat", Linnet answered.

"Well, they went on from there and travelled some distance slowly, and after awhile they came to a place where there were twelve wells of water and seventy palm trees. They camped there for awhile. I think perhaps you can guess what the twelve wells of water pictured. Can you?"

"Would they be the twelve disciples, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. The twelve disciples were splendid sources of truth for the people and their teachings will give them a good supply in the days of Christ's Kingdom. Then there were seventy palm trees. They pictured the prophets and grand men of old, Moses and perhaps Aaron included, who will be the rulers and leaders of the people during the thousand years of Christ's reign on the earth. They will be like a shade to shelter the people from the sunlight of God's presence, which would be too bright for them while

they are still imperfect. They will also help to feed them, for palm trees yield pleasant fruit as well as shade. God's Word likens His people to palm trees because they grow straight up as if they wished to get as near to God as possible. Then they have not much root and so Christians never cling very close to the earth. They have good fruit, too, and every child of God must show fruit of righteousness. Do you remember some of the fruits we should have, Linnet?"

"Yes, Mummy. There is faith and love and goodness and patience."

"Yes, dear, those are some of the fruits of character God wants us to show. There is humility and meekness, knowledge of God and kindness and faithfulness, also. Then there is another thing about the palm tree that is like a Christian. It has a good, solid heart. The Bible says, '*The wicked flourish like a bay tree*' for it is just the opposite to a palm. It has a bushy and showy top that is usually full of insects and worms and dirt and it has no fruit at all. It is low and spreading and it has a hollow trunk, often quite rotten."

"I think the palm tree is much nicer, Mummy."

"We want to be like palm trees, Linnet. You can see why the seventy palm trees were such a good picture of the fine old prophets and good men who lived before Jesus came."

"From Elim - and by the way that was where the manna was given to the people - they went on to a place that was called Rephidim, which was close to the foot of the mountain where God had first spoken to Moses. There they could not find any water and the people again complained to Moses. God wished to make one thing very clear to us, and that was that Jesus was to be our source of Truth. So here again He gave us a picture of Jesus. God said to Moses, 'I will show you a rock and you must take your rod and hit the rock and it will split and water will pour out of it for the people.' So Moses went to the rock God showed him and he hit it with his rod and the water poured out like a great river. That river followed the people in their wanderings for some time."

"You said it was another picture of Jesus, Mummy", Linnet said. "What did it mean?"

"Yes, dear. The rock pictured Jesus. You remember the words of that hymn you like so well, 'Jesus is a rock in a weary land, a refuge in the time of storm.' Moses was a symbol of God's just law in this picture and it was the just Law of God that demanded that someone must die for Adam's sin, and Jesus took Adam's place and died for him. Here God was showing that it was the just Law of God that would cause Jesus to be killed for our sins. The hitting of the rock pictured the death of Jesus and the water that poured out pictured the great river of truth that came to us through Jesus' death."

"Then that river would picture the New Testament, would it Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. And just as the river followed the Children of Israel and kept them supplied with water, so the New Testament will supply truth to the people of the world in the Kingdom. But Jesus had to die before we could have that truth."

"But, Mummy, we have had the New Testament ever since Jesus came."

“Yes, dear, and it has supplied us with truth but in this picture the Israelites pictured the world who do not know the Truth. They cannot get the water till they see that Jesus died for them. It is really the Law that shows us that God could not bless the world till they realised why Jesus died. But the people of the world could not understand the Law.

“They were still resting at the place where Moses struck the rock when the Amalekites, a desert tribe who lived in the wilderness, came against Israel with a very large army. They were well armed and trained while the Israelites had very few arms and had always lived as slaves, for you remember it had been some time before Moses was born that the king of Egypt had made them his slaves, and Moses was over eighty years old. When the news came that the army was coming Moses said, ‘I will go up and stand on the hilltop where you can see me with the rod of God in my hand, and you must choose out men who are strong and brave to drive off the Amalekites.’ The next morning the chosen soldiers marched out with what weapons they could gather and Moses stood on the hilltop with the rod of God in his hand. Aaron and Hur went with him. Hur is said to have been Miriam’s husband. As long as Moses held up the rod toward heaven the Israelites were able to defeat the Amalekites but as soon as his arms grew too tired to hold the rod up they were driven back. So Aaron and Hur seated Moses on a rock and held up his arms.”

“Why could they not fight if Moses put his arm down, Mummy?”

“Perhaps it was because they thought that while he held the rod up God was fighting for them, and when he put it down they were frightened, Linnet. The big reason, however, was that it was part of the picture. God wished to show us that as long as we are keeping His law and trusting in Him, He can help us. He also wished to show that our hope is in keeping in close touch with Him and that, during the years of Jesus’ rule over the earth, especially at first, there will be those who will be enemies of Christ and who will try to prevent His Kingdom from gaining the promised power over the earth. These will be defeated if the rod or law of God is upheld. They drove their enemies all away with God’s help and God said He would blot out the memory of Amalek and that there would always be enmity between his people and the Children of Israel. This pictured that those who oppose the reign of Jesus will die and not be wakened again and that the people will always hate the rule of evil and oppose it.

While Moses was busy trying to free the people of Israel from Egypt he had sent his wife back to stay with her father. Jethro had been anxiously waiting for news of Moses’ success and now he came to visit the camp and brought Moses’ wife and two sons to him. Moses told Jethro all that had happened and Jethro was glad to hear of God’s great work and praised Him. They made sacrifices to God and offered thanks to Him for what He had done. Jethro saw that Moses was working too hard, so he advised him to choose the wisest of the men from each tribe and have them act as judges for the people. Then whenever there was any trouble or anything that puzzled the people they could go to the elders instead of bothering Moses with little things. Moses chose those whom he knew to be wise and level-headed men and set them over the people, and this was a picture of how, in the Kingdom, Jesus will choose wise men and good people to be governors over the people of earth, and these will bring all the more important questions to the rulers or princes of the earth. Perhaps these elders pictured the good men of old, just as the seventy palm trees did, but Jesus said, *‘Many shall come from the east and west and north and south and sit down with Abraham and Isaac and Jacob and the prophets in the*

*Kingdom.*' So it seems more likely that these were meant by the rulers or elders who were mentioned here."

"Did the people stay there long, Mummy?" Linnet asked, as she piled the last of the dishes away in the pantry shelves.

"They camped for a while, dear, and then started on to the desert around Mount Sinai. That was the mountain where God had appeared to Moses in the burning bush and had sent him to Egypt to save the people. As soon as they reached the mountain, and it took them three months to get there, Moses told them to camp there and he went up into the mountain to talk to God. The cloud now settled on the mountain and God spoke out of it to Moses. He told him to speak to the people and to tell them that He was the God who had brought them out of Egypt and that if they would agree to always keep the laws He would give them, they should be His own special people, a treasure above all other people. They should be a nation of priests and should teach God's laws to the other nations."

"But they did not keep it, did they Mummy?"

"No, dear one. They could not keep it. God's laws are perfect and only perfect people can keep them."

"I do not see why God gave them laws they could not keep, Mummy."

"God knew that trying to keep them would bring a blessing to the people and would keep them separate from other nations. Paul said it was intended to act as a schoolmaster to bring them to Christ. We can hardly understand his meaning without knowing something about schoolmasters in Paul's day. They went to the homes of the people and gathered up the children and took them to the place where they were taught. So the Law of God was to gather the people to Jesus that He might teach them."

"Mummy, the nuns here go around and gather the children and take them to the kindergarten, and after their classes are over they see them home again. Is that the way they did then?"

"Yes, dear. Well, as I was telling you, when Moses told the people what God had said they were pleased. They had seen God's great power and they thought it would be a grand thing to have His protection always. They thought more of the reward than they did of the task. I know some little people who, when Mother says, 'If you clean up the yard really well, I will take you to the beach for the afternoon', run away and gather up their bathing suits and pails and shovels and things to take to the beach and forget all about the yard they were supposed to clean up. They plan the fun they will have and think so much about it that when the time comes to go to the beach the yard is not touched. Then if Mother says, 'I cannot take you because your work has not been done', they cry and raise an awful fuss and think Mother is very unkind."

Linnet flushed a little and said, "I guess little people do think more of the reward than of the job, Mummy."

Mother smiled and replied, "Not only little folks, dear. There are a great many older folks who make the same mistake. I remember especially a man I once knew who claimed

the promises of God and never tried to fulfil the conditions. When someone said to him, 'Do not forget that there is a condition to those promises, Jesus said, "*Seek first the kingdom of God and His righteousness and all these things shall be added*", the man replied, 'That is what I am after. The Kingdom blessings and I intend to get all of them I can right now.'

"But he could not get them that way, Mummy."

"No, dear. He lost all the blessings and the favour of God and could not see why. That was the way with the Israelites. They thought only of the promised blessings and they said, '*All that the Lord has spoken we will do.*' Moses went back to God with their answer and the Lord replied, '*I will come veiled in a thick cloud and will speak to the people myself so that they may hear my voice and believe you when you say God has sent you. Tell the people to go and bathe themselves and wash their clothes and clean up the camp today and tomorrow and on the third day I will come to them. Make a fence around the mountain so that none of the people or their animals can come up on the mountain. Warn the people, too, that if anyone touches the mountain while my presence is upon it, they will die. Then when they hear a loud blast like a trumpet they must come near the mountain, but they must not as much as touch a stone of it for it is holy.*'"

"Why would they die if they touched it, Mummy."

"There were two reasons, Linnet. The first was that God wished to teach them that they must reverence Him and never be careless with anything that belonged to God. The second was that the mountain pictured the Kingdom of God in the days to come. The cloud on top was a picture of God and the top of the mountain pictured Jesus, while the stones that made the mountain pictured the true Church of God. Anyone who harms any one of God's children will be punished by our Heavenly Father Himself, for He says, '*Touch not mine anointed and do my prophets no harm.*' In the age to come no one will be able to touch God's true Church for they will be with God in heaven and cannot be even seen.

"Now, dear, our work is finished and our story too. Perhaps you might learn that verse for this time, '*Touch not mine anointed and do my prophets no harm.*'"

"The next story we have will be about the laws that God gave to the people. I want you to learn them for they are the basis of all the laws of every nation that claims to be Christian", Mrs Grey said, and then Linnet went to play with her dolls and Mother finished up her work.

## **Chapter 22: The Law of God is given to Man**

"Beneath the Mount of Sinai – before its fires were cold –  
Erected in the Israelite camp we find the calf of gold,  
For Nimrod's evil worship still held them in its thrall  
Until God's indignation burned against them one and all.  
He threatened to destroy them. Thus Moses' love was tried.  
To save God's chosen people their leader would have died."

Autumn days were quickly passing and winter was making itself felt in the little coast town where the Grey family made their home. Winter was, for the most part, a very rainy

time, chilly but not too cold. The long evenings permitted many hours when it was too dark for play out of doors and so there were many opportunities for quiet talks.

The older members of the family had their own interests and Linnet and her mother often found themselves alone for an hour or so. Even the regular studies that had previously taken up many evenings had been postponed on account of the illness of Mr Grey. He was rapidly recovering health and strength, but was still weak and tired easily so that he usually retired early to rest.

So on this particular evening of which we write Linnet and her mother had the living room all to themselves. Linnet had been reading and Mother was sitting in the big easy chair knitting but the child's interest in her story soon waned and she drew up a small and comfortable stool to her mother's knee.

"I am tired of reading, Mummy. Please tell me more of my Bible story."

"Very well, Linnet. We have come to the story of the most wonderful thing that ever happened, the time when God Himself came down to the earth and talked to the people and told them how they could please Him and gain His favour and help. I told you how Moses had the men build a fence around the mountain so that the people could not go up on it."

"It would be an awfully big job to build a fence around any of the mountains we can see from here, Mummy. Was Mount Sinai just a little bit of a mountain, or how could they put a fence all round it?"

"I can see my little girl's mind is working all right", Mrs Grey laughed. "Sinai is a very large mountain and very high. Where the Children of Israel were camped, however, there was a large plain or flat expanse of country. There the mountain rose sheer and steep, towering high above them. It would not be necessary to fence any part by the peak that rose in front of them for they would not be apt to go away back into the hills on either side to climb the mountain. Moses ordered that fences be built around the part near them. There were only three days for the work but there were six hundred thousand people, and if each one brought one pole it would make a very big fence. Perhaps the fence was something like the rail fences we see when we go out in the country for a ride.

"The people then took a good bath and washed their clothes and prepared for the wonderful thing that was going to happen on the third day. You may be sure there was a lot of excitement. You remember what a crowd of people went to the city when the King and Queen were coming? Well, this time it was not just a king but the great God of Heaven, the Creator of all the Earth, that was going to come down in sight of the people and speak to them."

"That would be wonderful, Mummy. Of course, they would not be able to see HIM?"

"No man can see God and live, Linnet. There was great excitement, and I am sure that no one slept in that morning in the camp of Israel. There was the plain, lying silent in the sunshine, with all the rows on rows of tents clustered together in front of that great rocky mountain that rose up and up from the plain with steep cliffs and stunted trees till it seemed to be lost in the cloud that hovered over it. It was the same cloud that had travelled before them all the way from Egypt."

“But Mummy, clouds change all the time. I have watched them often. Sometimes they seem to dissolve and fade away while you watch. How could the same cloud have travelled in front of them so long?”

“It was not just a cloud, Linnet. It was like a cloud but at times seemed more like a pillar of smoke. You see it was a disguise, you might say, or a hiding place for the great spirit being who represented God.”

“You mean the ‘Logos’, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear, *‘the messenger of the Covenant’* as He is sometimes called in the Bible, the great Logos or representative of God. The cloud was there to hide Him from their sight for they were not permitted to see Him. At first they were greatly interested in this strange cloud but as day after day passed and it was always there they became used to it. It travelled slowly in front of them and acted as a guide. When they camped it hovered over them. Now it had settled on the mountain at the foot of which they had camped.

“This morning, when God said He was going to speak to them, the cloud was not soft and white and beautiful as they were used to seeing it. It was black and stormy and lightning kept flashing across it, and there were rumbles and crashes of thunder as if a great storm was coming. Then there was a sound as if a great trumpet was blowing. Then Moses led the people from the camp to the foot of the mountain some distance from the fence. Now they saw that the whole mountain seemed to be smoking and trembling. The people were frightened but Moses told them not to be afraid but not to go any nearer. The sound of the trumpet grew louder and louder and now a voice called from the cloud to Moses and he told the people to stay where they were while he went on up to the mountain.”

“Would not Moses be killed, Mummy?”

“No, dear, Moses was a picture of Jesus and His true Church who will be called to take their place with God in heaven when the people of the world reach the Kingdom of God. Moses was not in any danger for God was taking care of him. Again God told Moses to warn the people not to come any nearer. Moses said, ‘They will not come, Lord, for we have fenced the mountain and warned them.’ “Go down and warn them again,’ answered the Lord, ‘for some might get curious and come too close and be killed.’

“Moses obeyed, and then God began to talk to the people from the cloud. He said to them:

*‘I am the Lord your God who brought you up out of Egypt, out of the house of bondage.*

*‘Thou shalt have no other gods before Me.*

*‘Thou shalt not make unto thee any graven image or the likeness of anything that is in the heaven above or in the earth beneath or in the waters under the earth.’”*

“What did that mean, Mummy? It is hard to understand the way the Bible puts it.”

“That is because it was written so long ago, dear, and our language has changed. To put it simply it means you must not make any figure or statue to represent God or kneel down to pray to any statue.”



"It is not wrong to have statues in our parks, is it Mummy?"

"No, dear. So long as we simply admire their beauty as a statue we are not breaking God's laws. Some people think that any figure or even a picture should not be made", Mrs Grey explained. "You remember in the city there is a lovely statue of an angel carrying a dead soldier. The statue is very beautiful but no one ever goes there to worship it or pray to it. It is just a memorial."

"Mummy, Mary told me that they have statues of Mary and the baby Jesus and of the saints in her church, and when they go in they bow down and cross themselves. Is that wrong?"

*"Thou shalt not bow down to them or serve them for I, the Lord Thy God, am a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of those that hate me, but showing mercy unto thousands of those that love me and keep my commandments."* Mrs Grey finished the quotation. "I often wondered how they explained their action in breaking that commandment myself, Linnet, till I was told that those who wrote the Bible the Catholics use had left that whole passage out purposely to deceive the people. If that is so, God will surely punish those who knew they were breaking God's laws. We have that passage in our Bible and no true child of God would ever bow down to any statue."

"Mummy, Mary said that when they pray to their little statue of Jesus on the cross they just use it to help them think of Him. Is that wrong too?"

"We must never make any excuse for breaking the laws of God. That is simply the excuse given to cover a fault. God's command is too plain to allow of any change. Let us see what the next command is:

*'Thou shalt not take the name of the Lord Thy God in vain for God will not hold him guiltless who taketh His name in vain.'*"

"Does that mean to use God's name, as some of the children do, when they are talking, Mummy?"

"It means that and much more, Linnet. It means if we claim to be God's children we must live as He would wish. The Jews claimed God's blessing and favour and said they were His people. He was warning them that they must be really His and obey Him for if they claimed to be His and then disobeyed, their punishment would be much greater than the punishment of those who never claimed to be His."

"But why, Mummy?"

"Linnet, suppose you and Beth were out playing and I said, 'Linnet, you must not go under the hose and get your dress wet', but Beth's mummy had not forbidden her to get wet. Suppose you both went under the hose, what would I do?"

"You would probably punish me and send Beth home", Linnet replied.

"That was just how God would do too, dear. He would not punish the one who was not His. That was what that commandment meant. Those who give themselves to God are

His children and must obey Him. They must not claim to be His and go their own way. What is a sin for you or me might not be a sin for Mary, for she is not God's child. What was a sin for the Children of Israel and would bring a severe punishment to them would not be a sin for the heathen who did not know God."

"Then those who are not God's children can do things we cannot do, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. There is another side to the question, however. I am making a nice cake for supper. You will have the dish to clean out and have a share of the cake too. Your playmates will not have that. You will be going out to visit your cousins and you will have a nice time and lots of fun, but your playmates will miss it all. At Christmas you will have a fine tree and plenty of gifts from the family. Your friends will not share them. Being our little girl brings many fine privileges and nice things that those who are not of our family will not have. You get them because you are our child. So God gives His very best gifts to those who are His. So you see, if we claim to belong to Him and do not live as His children, then we are taking His name in vain and will be punished. Do you understand, Linnet?"

"Yes, Mummy. I think it is nice to belong to God's family. He is so good and kind."

"He is indeed a loving Father, dear one, and if we always remember He is our Father and try to be like Him He will bless us always and care for us and give us *'every good and perfect gift.'* The next commandment is:

*Remember the sabbath day to keep it holy. Six days shalt thou labour and do all thy work but the seventh day is the sabbath of the Lord Thy God. In it thou shalt do no work, thou, nor thy son, nor thy daughter, thy manservant or thy maidservant, nor the cattle, nor the stranger that is within thy gate, for in six days the Lord made the heaven and the earth, the sea and all that in them is, and rested on the seventh day. Therefore the Lord blessed the seventh day and hallowed it."*

"What does 'hallowed' mean, Mummy?"

"It means to set a thing aside for His service."

"We keep the sabbath day, do we not Mummy?"

Well, darling, that depends on how you look at things. We really keep the first day of the week and not the seventh. However, it really does not matter much which day we keep as any day is the first or the seventh according to where you start to count. One thing we must remember. We are not Israelites and we are not under those laws as the Jews were. Jews everywhere keep the seventh day, Saturday, just as we keep Sunday, and there are those who claim we cannot belong to God unless we keep Saturday as our rest day. God, however, set the seventh day aside for our good. He knew that no one can work every day without a rest and not suffer for it. Jesus said, *The sabbath was made for man and not man for the sabbath.'* No wise person would ever try to make everyone work seven days in the week, for if there was not one day's rest in seven the health would soon break down. God, however, counts the spirit of obedience more than the exact keeping of the Law. If we then are really His Children we will try to obey Him every day and all day, not just one day in the week. Then, if we should have to do a little

work on the special day, it will not be counted wrong. We should always try to make Sunday a quiet, restful day, but we should serve God every day. We are His Children while the Jews were called a house of servants.

“The rest of the laws are very simple: ‘*Honour thy father and thy mother*’ and every good person does that. ‘*Thou shalt not kill. Thou shalt not commit adultery.*’”

“What does that mean, Mummy?”

“It means to be unfaithful to a husband or a wife. When one is married they must be good and faithful. It does not apply to little folks like you.”

“Then I cannot break that one, can I Mummy?”

“Not very well, dear. Then the next is: ‘*Thou shalt not steal.*’”

“Mummy, when it says, ‘Thou shalt not kill’, that only means killing people, does it not?”

“Yes, dear. God has given permission to the people to use animals for food and He also gave them instructions as to how they must be killed without needless pain or suffering. He told the Jews to use them as sacrifices also.”

“I can never see why they should kill animals, Mummy. Little lambs are so gentle and nice, and cows give us milk. I like meat but it does not seem right to kill anything”, Linnet said thoughtfully.

“When the Kingdom of God is fully established I believe even that will be stopped, Linnet. When the people killed an animal as a sacrifice to God, they were told to choose such animals from their flocks as they would be killing to use for meat anyway. In many cases most of the animal was used as meat for the priests. Only part was used as a sacrifice, so that the laws about sacrifices did not cause any unnecessary suffering or death. The animal must be killed without suffering or pain just as if it was to be used for food. However, we must remember God gave mankind fruit and vegetables as their proper food and only added meat when He wished to cut down the length of their lives. Many people believe that eating meat causes much sickness and shortens our lives.”

“God did not want people to live as long as they used to, did He Mummy?”

“No, dear. The longer the wicked man lives the more harm he can do, and very few people are so good that they could be trusted to have hundreds of years of life. Shortening the length of life was really meant as a kindness. God did forbid any person to take the life of another human being except when that person was guilty of killing someone.”

“Mummy, when God said, ‘Thou shalt not kill’ why do the ministers of the churches say it is right to have wars? Mary says their minister says every man should go to fight for his country.”

“That is because people have not faith enough to believe that God can protect those who obey Him. The people of the world have never had faith in God nor obeyed His laws. They are not God’s children and they do not obey Him. You obey me because you

are my little girl but you would not feel that you had to obey Mrs Jones; especially if she told you to do something I had forbidden you to do. You would say, 'Mother told me I must not do that.' If we are God's children we will obey Him."

"Whose children are they, Mummy, if they are not God's? Did He not make them?"

"God made only Adam and Eve, dear one. The only other real 'Son of God' on earth was Jesus. But suppose I were to adopt a baby, it would be mine and would have to obey me as much as you do. God agreed to adopt as His children anyone who would give their lives to Him and agree to obey Him. The people of the world did not want to do that, so they cannot be His people. Jesus said of the people who lived in His days, '*Ye are of your father, the devil, for his works you do*', and Paul said, '*His servants you are to whom you render service.*' So you see, if we do the things God has forbidden us to do such as stealing and telling falsehoods and so on, we cannot be God's children. God will adopt us and give us His love and care if we wish Him to. Those who go to war and kill their fellowmen are breaking God's laws and are proving they are not His children but are obeying the orders of Satan. Those who tell them that it is right to do such things are also Satan's children or servants and not under God's orders, but when the Kingdom is fully set up everyone will then be under the orders of Jesus and will have to obey Him. Then people will not hurt or kill anyone. Jesus says we must '*have love for one another*', and God's Word says, '*They shall not hurt nor destroy in all my Holy Kingdom, saith the Lord.*'

"The next law is: '*Thou shalt not bear false witness.*'

"What does that mean, Mummy?"

"To bear false witness is simply to tell falsehoods about people. To accuse them of things they have not done. Then comes the next one, '*Thou shalt not covet thy neighbour's goods.*' Do you know what that means, Linnet?"

"You explained that to me, Mummy. It means that we must not want or long for things that belong to others", Linnet answered. "Why is that wrong, Mummy?"

"Because if we long for what belongs to another we may be tempted to go farther and take it, then we will have broken two of God's laws.

"Now there you have the ten commandments God gave to the Jews. He gave them many other laws as well but He gave them through Moses. These ten He gave to them Himself, speaking to them in a voice as loud as thunder. Let us glance over them again. In short form they are:

1. Thou shalt have no god but me
2. Thou shalt not bow down to any image
3. Thou shalt not take God's name in vain
4. Remember the sabbath day and keep it holy
5. Honour thy father and thy mother
6. Thou shalt not kill
7. Thou shalt not be unfaithful to husband or wife
8. Thou shalt not steal
9. Thou shalt not tell falsehoods about others
10. Thou shalt not want or long for what belongs to others

“All God’s laws were built around those ten. All God’s children try to keep the spirit of those laws.”

“What do you mean by keeping the spirit of them, Mummy?”

“It means to look for the reason and meaning behind them and try to serve God truly. Jesus said that two laws, kept faithfully, would cover them all: *‘Thou shalt love the Lord with all thy heart and thou shalt love thy neighbour as thyself.’* If we love God truly, we will not want any other god or bow down to any image. We will not claim to be His and do wrong and we will keep every day, not just Sunday, holy. If we love others we will honour our parents and we will not harm anyone or envy them. So love is the fulfilment of the law and that is about as good a verse as I can give you for today.

“*Love is the fulfilling of the law.*’ If we are God’s children, adopted by Him, we will have His love in our hearts and so we will find the Law of God easy to keep.”

“Where is that verse, Mummy? I want to mark it in my Bible.”

“It is Romans 13:10, dear. Look it up for yourself.”

“Mummy, that is only half the verse. I think I will learn it all. It says: *‘Love worketh no ill to his neighbour, therefore love is the fulfilling of the law’*” Linnet said a moment later as she marked the verse in her Bible.

## Chapter 23: The Tabernacle in the Wilderness

The sacred edifice of God reveals  
His purpose – who has called us by His grace  
And shows the earthly course of those He seals  
To be His own; those who shall see His face.

Oh, could we realise the depths of this  
And what it meant to Him who gave those signs –  
The Logos in the realms of Heavenly bliss  
Working out all Jehovah’s grand designs.  
Giving these types He surely must have seen  
The part it was destined for Him to play,  
And the great testing of His love I ween  
Was known to Him, as at God’s word He made  
The pictures of that gracious Son of God  
Who should upon God’s altar yet be laid  
To save mankind. Yet did He not hold back  
But said, *‘I come to do Thy will, Oh God,  
All that is written of me in Thy Word.’*  
He gave His life into the Father’s hands  
And trusted all His future to His grace,  
Who, in return promised the great reward –  
The Life Divine – to Him; and, to our race  
Forgiveness and a perfect life on earth.

(“ween” = think or imagine)

Types and Shadows

"Mummy, could you show me how to make a tent?" Linnet had been working for some time with scraps of paper at the kitchen table.

"A tent, dear? Is that what you're trying to make? What kind of a tent?"

"The kind Indians live in, Mummy. We are making a village at school and teacher told us each to make Indian tents. I cannot get mine to go right."

Mrs Grey put her work aside and went to her little daughter's assistance. As she folded the paper and showed Linnet how to cut it, she said, "Do you know what was the most wonderful tent ever made, dear?"

"Do you mean the tent the Israelites made for God to live in, Mummy?"

"That is the one I mean, Linnet. Of course, it was not made like the Indians made their tents, which were called wigwams."

"How was it made, Mummy?" Linnet asked, cutting her paper along the lines her mother had marked. "Could you make me a model of it?"

"That would be a big order, Linnet, but I can show you when you finish this tent how it was made, if you wish."

Linnet soon had the model wigwam ready for the school sand table, and then she claimed Mother's promise. "Now for the Tabernacle, Mummy. Was it round like my wigwam?"

"No, darling. The Tabernacle had to be very carefully made for it was to be a picture of God's plan, just as the rainbow was. God, as you will remember, gave His laws to the people Himself and the people were so frightened by the lightning and thunder and smoke and the loud voice that they asked Moses to please ask God not to speak to them any more but to have Him speak to Moses and let their leader tell them what he said. Moses said, 'Do not be afraid. God has only come to prove you and to show you that He is a real God, so you will understand that I have told you the truth about Him. Then you will do as He says and not disobey Him.' Then Moses had them make sacrifices to God and he took the blood of the sacrifices and sprinkled the people with it to bind the covenant.

"God gave Moses many rules for the people, but they were all built on the ten commandments I have given you. Moses wrote them all down for the people so they would not forget them. Then God called Moses up into the mountain. He also told him to take Aaron and his two sons and the seventy elders of the people up onto the mountainside with him. When they had gone up some distance God gave them a vision of His glory. We are not told just what they saw, but only that '*They saw the God of Israel and there was under His feet a pavement that seemed to be made of sapphire and as the body of heaven in its clearness.*' The elders of Israel all saw this vision and Moses left them there and went on up to talk to God."

"But Mummy, I thought you said no one ever saw God."

“No one has ever seen God, dear, or can see Him. They only saw a vision of God; perhaps they did see the Logos who represented God, for He was then a great angel and was watching over them and taking God’s place with them. The elders went back to the camp and Moses went on up to talk to God. There God gave him two stone tablets made as I told you they made them in those days, and on these was written, in God’s own handwriting, or that of the Logos, His representative, the ten commandments and the special rules that God had given them.

“Then God showed Moses a model of the Tabernacle and explained to him how each part was to be made. He gave careful instructions about every part of that wonderful tent and all its furniture and the dishes to be used in the service. He told Moses to be very careful that everything was made exactly as He showed him. That was what made the Tabernacle the most wonderful building ever made, for it was planned by God Himself and each part was meant to picture some feature of the Plan.

“First they must cut poles of a special sort of wood to make a fence around the Tabernacle. There were to be twenty poles on each side and ten at each end. Each pole was to be made of wood and set in a copper socket which would hold it up out of the sand. Then it must have a silver band on the top with silver hooks to hold up the curtains which were to form the fence. Do you remember what silver pictured, Linnet?”

“Silver was the same as water, as it not, Mummy? It pictured Truth, did it not?”

“That is right, dear, and copper pictured perfect human nature. When copper is polished it looks exactly like gold, and gold pictures Divine Nature. Man is made in the image of God, but like copper the image can be badly spoiled and tarnished. Now the poles were wood and they would decay, showing that men die, but the copper sockets showed that the men the poles pictured had a standing with God as perfect men, they had accepted Christ and it was counted to them as righteousness. The silver tops and hooks showed that they had truth in their minds and held up the Righteousness of Christ for the world to see. The curtains were made of white linen and you know what that means, do you not?”

“The Righteousness of Christ, Mummy. How can we hold up His righteousness?”

“By living pure lives and showing what being a true Christian means, dear. Now you see that this fence pictured true Christians, showing the purity of Christian lives by their knowledge of God’s truth. At the front of the Tabernacle there was a curtained entrance, but the curtains here were made of white, red, purple and blue linen, embroidered in gold thread. Can you tell me what those colours meant, Linnet?”

“I can if they are the same as in the rainbow and the pearl, Mummy, for I learned the verse about the colours:

‘The red of the ransom, the gold Divine  
In the orange hues of God’s purpose shine,  
The green of the everlasting life,  
The blue of the faith that conquers strife,  
While the indigo of our griefs we see  
Through the purple shade of His majesty.’

She repeated the verse softly. "That is, red for the ransom, blue for faithfulness, gold for the Divine nature, and purple for royalty and white for righteousness. Is that right, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. God's pictures never change and His symbols are the same wherever they are found. This gateway was the only entrance to the Court around the Tabernacle." Mrs Grey was folding a piece of paper to represent the fence, and now she set it up in a hollow square on the table. "Jesus said, *'I am the way, the truth and the life. No one cometh unto the Father but by me.'* So we know that He was the gateway and the colours of the curtain showed that He was pure, faithful, and a Son of God (purple for royalty and gold for the Divine things) and that He gave His life as a ransom."

"Did the posts mean the same as those around the fence, Mummy?"

"They were to show that Jesus was human like we are but had more truth. As no one can get near to God except through Jesus, so no one could get into the Court except through that gate. Inside the gate was an altar made like a square box without a top or bottom and in the upper side a grate was set so that when sacrifices were burned on it the ashes fell through. The altar was made of wood and covered with copper. If it had been all copper it would have been too heavy to carry. There were rings through the sides to put rods through to carry it. This altar showed that no one could get near to God without making a sacrifice."

"Do we have to make a sacrifice, Mummy? I thought we could go to God at an time", Linnet said.

"Christ, our Passover, was sacrificed for us, Linnet", Mrs Grey replied. "But we, too, must give something to God. Do you know what that is?"

"Our lives, Mummy?" It was a question.

"Yes, dear. We must give our lives to Him. It is a living sacrifice and means that we will serve Him always. That is the sacrifice we offer on the altar. But here inside the fence, too, and closer to the tent is a great big copper bowl shaped something like this fruit dish." Mrs Grey used a small short-stemmed sherbet glass to represent the laver. "It was made of copper and was always kept filled with water, and every sacrifice must be washed in it before it was offered to God. The priests must wash there also before they could offer any sacrifices. Can you guess what that pictured?"

Linnet thought awhile and Mother began to hum softly the tune of a well-known hymn, 'Washed in the blood of the Lamb.' Linnet caught the suggested thought. "Does it mean we have to be washed before we can belong to God, Mummy?"

"Yes, dear. We are soiled with sin and only the blood of Jesus can cleanse us from it. Isaiah the prophet said, *'Wash you and make you clean; put away evil...'* Then Paul, the Apostle, says, *'Ye are washed, ye are sanctified'* (set aside), and Jesus said, *'Now you are clean through the words I have spoken unto you.'* So the water in the laver would picture truth. We are washed in truth by believing that Jesus died for us."

"But how about the tent, Mummy? You were going to show me how that was made."



"The tents used in those days were square and flat and dark, Linnet, like a box. But this tent had walls made of wooden boards covered with thin sheets of gold all over till they looked like slabs of solid gold but were not so heavy. These boards were set in silver sockets made to fit them closely, and probably with long points that could be pushed down into the sand. This kept the gold-covered boards off the ground and held them upright. Then long poles were shoved through golden rings in the boards to hold them all together. There were poles at the top and bottom of the boards and in the centre also. That made three poles on each side and at the back. Each board had six golden rings for the poles, two at the top, two at the bottom and two in the centre." As she talked, Mrs Grey folded a piece of paper to make the three sides of the Tabernacle.

"You forgot the front, Mummy", Linnet said.

"The front was a curtain like the gate of the Court, dear. Now we have the three gold walls. Then there were five golden pillars or wooden pillars covered with gold to hold the curtains. The tent was divided into two parts. The outside or front room was twice as big as the inner room. They were divided by a curtain held up by five golden pillars also. When the walls were set up they were to be covered by a curtain made of strips of the cloth used in the gate and embroidered all over with golden angels. This work was to be done by the women in the camp, while the men must gather the wood and make the posts and furniture. This curtain was to be stretched over the tent like a flat ceiling and the strips of cloth were to be fastened together with fasteners of gold. Over this curtain another cover was stretched. This was to be woven from goats' hair, a sort of felt cloth that would be stiff and would keep out rain. This was to be dyed red, and over the top of all this was another cover of badger or seal skins."

"What a lot of covers, Mummy! Why were there so many?"

"Well, dear, the inside curtain was to match the walls and make the inside beautiful. The red cover was to protect it and to picture that Jesus' death or blood was the covering of all who came to God. The top cover hid all the beauty inside from the world, for it was black and ugly. So God's perfect plan appears black and ugly to the worldly people who never see the beauty inside. It also served to keep the whole tent watertight. This cover would stretch out larger than the tent and protect the walls from the weather. Outside the Tabernacle was plain and unattractive, inside it was very beautiful with the walls of the same colours as the gate – red, blue, purple and white embroidered with gold angels all over it. There was no floor but the hard-packed earth. Do you remember what was in the first room, Linnet?"

"There was a table of gold, Mummy, and a lampstand. I remember them in the picture in my story book."

"There was a small altar also, Linnet. When you went in through the curtains at the entrance there was the table on the right-hand side. This table was made of wood and all covered with pure gold, which was carved in a beautiful design. On the table were two plates and on each plate were six flat cakes of unleavened bread not unlike our soda crackers. There were twelve cakes in all. These pictured first the twelve tribes of Israel and then the twelve tribes or divisions of God's true Church. The twelve apostles were the heads of these twelve divisions."

"Mummy, there are a lot of twelves in the Bible. You said Ishmael had twelve sons and they pictured the twelve sons of Jacob, or was it the twelve tribes?"

"Ishmael pictured the Jewish nation and his twelve sons showed that there would be twelve divisions or tribes known all together as Israelites, or Jews, who would fail to gain the promises of God. Isaac pictured the head of the Church, Jesus, and the twelve sons of Jacob (Isaac's grandsons) who inherited the wealth of Isaac and the favour of God, showed that there would be twelve divisions of the true Church of Christ, who would inherit the wealth of God's Kingdom and the promises of God. That is why you find the number twelve so often. It is seen in every picture of the church, or nearly every one. The twelve cakes on the golden table pictured the 'Spiritual tribes.' On each pile of cakes was a handful of incense. This is a sort of spice which smells very sweet when it is burning. It pictures the prayers and services of the disciples. The lampstand stood here." Mrs Grey indicated the spot in the paper tent she had made and put a little piece of paper to show where the different furnishings stood. "The lampstand was made of solid gold in a very beautiful design. There was a centre piece like the stem of a plant, and on top of this one lamp was set. Then there were three arms on each side and each held a golden lamp also."

"I thought it was a candlestick, Mummy. That is what it is called in my book."

"It was spoken of as a candlestick at times, Linnet, but they had no candles then such as we have. They used small golden bowls made like an invalid's cup."

"Like the white cup you used when Daddy was too sick to sit up for a drink, Mummy?"

"Very much like that. They were filled with oil and had a thick cord that went up through the spout. This cord soaked up the oil and burned with a clear, bright light. There were seven of these golden lamps and they were made so you could lift them out and polish and fill them with oil. This lampstand was carved to show a flower and then a fruit above it, to show that the Church which it pictured would be fruitful and have the Christian graces of patience and love and kindness and so on, and that there would be seven parts or ages of the Church and each would give light to the world. The High Priest, Aaron, was to keep the lamps always filled with oil and see they never went out. That showed how Jesus would care of His Church. Then there was the little golden altar. It had a hollow in it to hold a lamp too, and the priest had to set his censor or lantern, as we would call it, in the hollow and sprinkle incense on the coals in it to make a sweet perfume to God. This perfume pictured the service and prayers of the true Church. There was no other furniture in this outside room."

"I know what was in the inner room, Mummy; it was the Ark."

"That is right, dear. The Ark was the only thing in the inside room, which was called the 'Holy of Holies.' It was a box about the size of your sister's cedar chest and it was covered with gold inside and out and had a lid made of solid gold. Do you remember what was on that lid, Linnet?"

"There were two golden angels there, Mummy, and they knelt there facing each other, and there was a bright light between them that showed that God was with the people."

"Yes, dear. The box pictured the true Church in heaven. That is, Jesus and all those who are really His. The lid pictured the Justice of God and the two angels pictured His love and His power. In the Ark was kept the Law of God on the two tablets of stone. This showed God's wisdom. God Himself was pictured by the light that shone there always. This inner room pictured heaven, where God lives."

"It was a very wonderful tent, Mummy. I wish I could have seen it."

"No one but the priests could ever go inside it, dear, and to everyone else its beauty was hidden. You see, it was a picture of the Plan of God. The first curtain or veil pictured our consecration to God. Do you know what that means?"

"Yes, Mummy. It means giving ourselves into God's hands and letting Him do whatever He likes with us."

"That is right, dear. Then this tent showed that we must give ourselves completely to God before we could get into His House. Now only the priests could get into the Tabernacle so they pictured those who give themselves to God. They were to eat the bread off the golden table every morning and replace it with fresh loaves. This showed that we are to feed on the Word of God every day."

"But Mummy, the bread pictured the disciples, you said, didn't you?"

"No, Linnet. The twelve tribes of Israel of which the disciples were the heads", Mrs Grey reminded her. "The true Church is always a source of food to all who give themselves to God. In a way the cakes pictured all the truth God had given through the Church rather than the Church itself. Just so, the light of the lamps on the lampstand pictured the light of all the truth that God has given through the Church ever since Jesus came. The high priest pictured Jesus, who kept the lamps always lighted and supplied with oil. I wonder if you can remember what the oil was?"

"I am afraid I have forgotten that, Mummy", Linnet confessed.

"You have remembered a great deal for one so young, dear, so it is no wonder if you forget some things. The oil pictured the spirit of God which makes us kind and loving and helps us to grow like Jesus, dear. This oil or spirit can only come to us through Jesus. Now you see when we give ourselves to Jesus we have the light of truth and the food of God's Word and we offer up our service and prayer to God on the golden altar."

"What does this other veil or curtain mean then, Mummy?"

"What has to happen to God's children before they can go to heaven and see God, dear?"

"They have to die, Mummy. Is that what this curtain means?"

"Yes, dear. After we give ourselves to God we are pictured as living in this outer room. Then, when God calls us, we go down under this curtain, which pictures death, and rise up in the inner room, in heaven with God."

"It is like what you said about going through the door with the red glass, Mummy."

“Yes, dear, and you notice that the Tabernacle shows that there is only one way to get to heaven. First we must enter the gateway, that is, by coming to Jesus. Then we must recognise the sacrifice He made for us and be washed clean of all our sins by faith in His Word of truth. Then we must go under the curtain by giving ourselves and all we have to Him, and then we must live in the light of His truth and feed on His Word and spend our lives in service and prayer, and then go through the veil of death. *There is no other name under heaven given amongst men whereby they can be saved.*”

“All who do not go to heaven will live here on the earth in the Kingdom though, won’t they, Mummy?”

“Yes, Linnet. They are pictured by the Israelites who lived in the camp outside the fence. They never saw the beauties of the Tabernacle. They did not even enter the Court and so could not get into the Tabernacle, but they were blessed and protected by the presence of God amongst them as long as they obeyed. When they sinned they were punished. So it will be with the world. They will be blessed and given food and health and good things as long as they obey. If they disobey God’s Word they will die and not again be wakened. Here is a little verse for you today. It is part of the prophecy of John in Revelation 21:3, and it will soon be true: *‘The tabernacle of God is with men and He will dwell with them and they shall be His people and He will be their God.’*

“Now, dear, I must go and get some work done. I hope the little wigwam will be all right for the sand table.”

“I had completely forgotten it, Mummy. Thank you for helping me and for telling me about God’s wonderful tent”, Linnet said, and went to put her little tent away.

## **Chapter 24: Serving God in the Wilderness**

Oh Father, Lord of Life, I long to sing  
Thy praise and tell the story of Thy grace  
To people struggling through this vale of tears;  
To bid them lift their eyes and see Thy face;  
But how can such a faltering tongue as mine  
Do justice to Thy wonder and Thy love?  
So I must wait to sing in fullest measure  
Till I may tread the pearly courts above.

“All my little friends have gone to Sunday School today, Mummy, and I am all alone. Could you spare time to tell me a story, do you think?” Linnet said one Sunday that winter.

“I guess I can, dear. Daddy is having a rest and the others are all out. I want my little girl to know all that she can about her Bible, for it will be a wonderful help in days to come, dear.”

“There is one thing that puzzles me, Mummy. All my little friends go to Sunday School. They all learn about God but they all learn different things. Mary says that when people die they all go to a place with a funny name and that they are punished for all their sins there and must stay there until they have learned to be good, then they will go to

heaven. Jennie says people go to heaven as soon as they die unless they are very wicked, but those who do wrong are put into a fire and burned up. You have always taught me that the dead are just asleep and will wake up when Jesus calls them and live here on the earth and be very happy. All, that is, but those who have given their lives to God and have served Him and whom He has chosen to be with Him in heaven. Everyone claims to learn about God from the Bible, but they all learn different things. It puzzles me, Mummy."

"No wonder, dearest. It has puzzled a lot of people and it has made those who do not understand think either that the Bible is a queer mixture or no one understands it. The whole truth is that the people have stopped trying to learn what the Bible really teaches, and they just believe what they are told. When Jesus died He left the pure truth with His disciples and had them write it down for us, and Paul said '*Study to show thyself approved of God, a workman that needs not to be ashamed, rightly dividing the word of truth.*' But the people soon began to think it was too much trouble to study and the Bible was hard to understand, so they appointed men to study it for them and explain it. They paid the men for the work. That would have worked out if the men who were paid to study the Bible had been sincere and honest, but they were not always honest.

"Here is a little story that will show you what I mean. A man once had a big farm and he had a lot of servants to work for him. He was such a busy man that he did not have time to watch the servants all the time so he decided that he would write out instructions every day about the work to be done. He called his servants and said, 'Each day I will put up here on the wall a list of the work that must be done by each of you that day. You must come every morning and read the notice and see that the work is done well. I will hold each man responsible for his own work.' Well, it looked like a fine idea but every morning the list ran something like this: 'John and Henry, milk the cows and feed them first, then clean the stables. Jim, feed the pigs and chickens, and Mary and Nellie, strain the milk and put it away. Then John and Henry and Jim must plough, the girls must do up the housework', and so on. The work seemed always to be the same but sometimes there would be special jobs. At first the servants read the daily order and did the work well. Then they began to get lazy and they said, 'There is really no reason why we should all read the notices. It will work just as well if John reads it and tell us each what do.' So they offered to give John a part of their wages and do some of his work if he would read the messages each day and just tell them if there was anything special to attend to. That worked quite well for a while, then John began to see how he could use this arrangement for his own benefit. He could share up his part of the work between the others and have a fine easy time to himself. So, instead of milking the cows himself he would say, 'I have to go down to the wood lot this morning and Henry and Jim must milk the cows.' Soon John was having a fine, easy time and the others never suspected that he was not being sent on special errands but was just taking advantage of them.

"Now when a person begins to get lazy and leave their work they soon get lazier, and before long any exertion seems too great. John was getting extra pay for reading the master's messages every morning and giving the orders to his fellow servants. Soon he began to feel that there was no sense in him reading the orders every day. He knew pretty well what had to be done so he started just giving the men orders himself. The others never read the orders so they never guessed that they were not being given the right tasks, and much of the work the master wished done was neglected. Of course, they could have gone and checked up but that was too much trouble. 'Why keep a dog

and bark yourself?' they would say, 'We pay John well to read the orders for the day. He is the one responsible.'

"Now it just happened after some time that the master was passing through a field and he noticed a big pile of rubbish that was overrun with rats. He knew that rats carried disease so he thought, 'I must have that rubbish cleaned up or there may be an outbreak of sickness. I have heard that there is cholera (a dangerous and terrible sickness from which many people die) in the district and the rats may spread it.' So in the next day's orders he put, 'I want you all to stop any but the necessary tasks of feeding the animals and milking today and go out and clean up the rubbish dump in the north field. Kill all the rats and burn everything so there will be no sickness among you.' Well, you can guess what happened, can't you?"

"Yes, Mummy. I suppose no one read the order and the rubbish was left."

"That is exactly what happened. Soon the terrible sickness began to spread among the servants. They suffered terribly and many died. The master remembered the rubbish and went out to see if it had been cleaned up. Of course, it was still there. Then he found out that none of his servants had been paying the slightest attention to his orders. Their sickness and pain was the result of their own carelessness. If they had read the orders the rubbish would not have been there. That is the way it was with the Bible. God's orders were that everyone must study the Bible and look for the special orders in it. But the people felt that it was too much trouble to read the Bible and look for God's special orders. That is the reason why one church teaches one thing and another teaches a different thing. At first the people had only one church to read and explain God's Word, then they had two, and soon they had several, as they have now, and these leaders have not troubled to study God's Word but they have taken what other men said was in the orders for the day. They have been misled and have misled others and have told the people things that are not there at all. Satan soon saw that errors were mixed with the truth and now the churches have very little idea what God has put in His orders. There is just a very big rubbish dump, and the result of not reading and obeying God's daily orders is that there is great sorrow and trouble in the world."

"I should think God would punish those who told the people falsehoods, Mummy", Linnet said.

"He will, darling, but we must remember that every person who does not read and study God's Word for himself, as soon as he is old enough, is just as disobedient as the leaders. God expects every person to read the orders and obey them and not to pay others to do it for them. You remember that the Manna was a picture of God's Word and each family had to gather their own Manna for themselves. They had to gather it every day, too."

"They did not have any churches or Sunday Schools did they, Mummy?"

"No, Linnet. God told Moses what they must do and they had to obey him."

"Moses would not fool them, would he Mummy? He always told them what God said."

"Yes, dear. Of course, then there were not so many people who knew about God. The people were no better than they are today though, for while Moses was up in the

mountain learning how to make the Tabernacle and getting the copy of the Law, the people began to think he had left them for good. You see, he was gone forty days (that is over a month) and they began to think he had been killed. They forgot that the cloud meant that God was watching them and they began to get very restless. They said, 'Let us make gods for ourselves like the people of Egypt used to have and worship them. We do not know what has become of that man, Moses. He may have died up there on the mountain.'

"But Mummy, God had told them they must not make gods or worship them!"

"Yes, dear. But already they were planning to break their promise to God. You see, there were a lot of Egyptians among them and they helped to persuade the Children of Israel that the gods of Egypt were not so bad after all. They went to Aaron and asked him to make them a god to worship."

"Aaron would not do that, would he?" Linnet found it hard to understand how anyone who had once known God could so soon forget Him. "Aaron had seen God."

"Aaron was not a strong fine man like his brother, dear. He was a good picture of those claiming to be the Church who have been far too quick to disobey God's laws. He was afraid the people would get ugly with him and he said, 'Go and gather up your golden bracelets and earrings and jewels that you borrowed from the Egyptians and bring them to me.' When they obeyed he took all the gold and melted it down and made it into a golden calf like the people of Egypt worshipped. They took the golden calf and set it up on a pillar, and the people gathered around and said, 'This is our God which brought us out of Egypt. We will serve it.'"

"You said Aaron was a picture of those claiming to be the Church, Mummy. I did not think they would worship a golden calf."

"Strange as it may seem, dear, most people who claim to be Christians are always ready to worship the golden calf. You see, that calf was made of gold. Gold is used for money and there are very few people, even among those who claim to serve Jesus, who do not really love money better than God. Money is the golden calf. If a person would be willing to break any law of God in order to get more money for himself or for his family, he is showing that Gold is really his god. God always tests His people to see if they really love Him or money best. Any minister who teaches false doctrines in order to please those who pay his salary is like Aaron setting up a golden calf to worship it. There are very few people in the world who would give up their jobs rather than disobey God. They love the money better than God. That is what it means to worship the golden calf."

"I am sure I would never love money best", Linnet said.

"No one can say till they have grown old enough to understand all that money means to people. I remember once when I was quite small and we had been very poor and never had nice things like other people had. My Daddy had a fine job offered to him with a very good salary that would mean we could have a fine, big house and nice clothes and almost everything we wanted. The job seemed all right and we were so glad when Daddy took it. For a month everything went well, then Daddy found that he must do something he knew God would not wish him to do. Like many good jobs, there was a catch to it. Daddy thought and thought, but no matter how he looked at it he knew God

would not wish him to do what they demanded of him. It was not just or right. He had to decide between God and the job which meant fine clothes, a nice home and lots of money.

"I was quite young but I heard enough to understand that if Daddy kept that job we would be able to have everything our hearts desired, and if he did what he knew was right he would have to go out and look for work and we might always be poor. Still, I watched anxiously and I loved my Dad better than ever when I knew he had given up the good job. I heard my sister complaining bitterly about his decision and telling Mother that there was no sense in letting such a fine chance slip by. Someone else would take the job and enjoy the good things of life. But I longed to tell my father how much I admired him. I was not supposed to know anything about it and so I could not say anything, but I tried to show him every way I could that I approved of his choice.

"We were always poor but I never minded much after that. I felt it was far better to have God's love and favour than any amount of money. I have always been glad and I know that God blessed my father for his faithfulness."

"Mummy, what did Moses do when he found out what the people had done?"

"Well, dear, Moses was up in the mountain for forty days and during that time he had learned all about the building of the Tabernacle and the work that was to be done. Then one day God said to him, 'Moses, you must go right back to the camp for the people have already forgotten their promise to serve me and have made a golden calf and have worshipped it. I have seen what kind of people they are and now I will destroy them all and I will take you in their place and make you and your family into a great nation instead of these disobedient people.'

"But He did not do that, did he Mummy?" Linnet interrupted.

"No, darling, God wanted to see whether Moses loved Him the most of everything or if he would be willing to let Him destroy the people so he might have a great position and honour for himself. God was well pleased with Moses when he dropped right down on his knees and said, 'Oh God, do not get so angry with these people. They are your people and you have done so much for them. You showed great wonders in Egypt and brought the people out when the king would not let them go. Now, Lord, if you were to destroy them all people would say you just brought them here to kill them in the mountains. Please forgive the people and remember your promise to Abraham and Isaac and Jacob, for you swore to them that you would give the land of Canaan to their children. People everywhere would speak against you if you killed the people. I know they have sinned but please forgive them, not because they deserve it but because of your honour and your promise.'

"Moses cared more than God's name should be honoured than he did for wealth or glory. He loved God best of everything. God was greatly pleased with Moses and said, 'I will forgive them for your sake, Moses. Now go down to them.' So Moses took the stone tablets that God had written the laws on with His own dear hand and started down the hill. Soon he met Joshua, whom he had left on the hillside to wait for him, and they went down together. Joshua could see Moses was greatly troubled but he did not ask questions.



“When they got near the camp Joshua said, ‘I can hear the sound of music and singing.’ Moses did not answer and soon they came out on the hillside where they could see what was going on. There was the golden calf set up on a pillar and most of the people dancing and singing and worshipping the calf as did the heathen people of Egypt. Moses was so angry that he threw the beautiful stone tablets God had made down and broke them to pieces. He felt that such wicked people did not deserve to have them. Then he went into the camp and smashed that golden calf to pieces and ground it all into powder and then sprinkled it on the water the people had to drink and made them drink it. He demanded an explanation from Aaron. Aaron blamed the people. ‘They were determined to have a god such as they had in Egypt and I could not make them behave’, he said. Then Moses saw that many of the people had taken off their clothes as the heathen did in their wild dances and they were acting as the heathen people do in their drunken ‘pow-wows.’ He was so disgusted and angry. He stood in the gateway of the camp and called, ‘Everyone who is on God’s side and wishes to serve Him, come here to me.’ Then all the sons of Levi came to him. Moses said, ‘Go among those sinful people and kill them before God destroys all the people in the camp for their sins.’

“The Levites obeyed, and three thousand of the wicked idol-worshippers were killed. Then Moses ordered the rest of the people to go to their homes and to consecrate themselves to God and he would try and get God to forgive them. He said, ‘You have sinned terribly but I will try to make an atonement for you.’ He went to God again and prayed for the forgiveness of the people and he said, ‘Lord, these people have been very wicked and have broken all their promises. Please forgive them or let me suffer for their sins. I would rather have my name blotted out, I would rather die, than have these people destroyed.’ Then God answered, ‘Everyone who has sinned against me shall be punished for his own sins. However, for your sake I will spare them now. I will send my angel before you to lead you to the land I have promised, but I myself will no longer go among you for you are a wicked, stubborn people and I will even yet punish you for your sins.’

“Moses told the people of God’s anger, and they mourned for their sins. Moses knew that one reason for the people’s sins was that they had not enough to do, so he set them all to work, some men to cut and prepare the wood for the Tabernacle posts and walls and for the fence, others to weave linen curtains and some to embroider the curtains. Others had to make the Ark and the golden dishes and the clothes for the priests. Many of the people who had taken part in the dances and the worship of the golden calf had taken some of the diseases that the Egyptian people suffered from and were very ill. God had promised that if they would obey and serve Him only they would never be ill, but if they disobeyed they would suffer. When Moses had set all the people to work making parts of the Tabernacle and the furniture for it, he went back up the mountain to talk to God again. He had broken the tablets with the Law of God written on them and so God told him he would have to make new ones and write the law on them himself. It took Moses forty days to complete the work and when he returned this time the people had not again disobeyed.”

“Where did they get the wood and the gold for the Tabernacle, Mummy?”

“The men had to go up into the mountains and look for the right kind of trees and then cut them down and make them into planks and poles. There were no lumber mills where they could get it all ready for use as we can now, dear. The gold came from the dishes and rings and ornaments they had been given by the people of Egypt who wished to

show friendship to them when they were afraid God was going to destroy them. They may also have found gold around the mountains where they camped for they would need a great deal for the work they had to do. When Moses returned from the mountain the second time he watched over the work for the Tabernacle and saw everything was made right for the house or tent of God. Soon everything was ready and the Tabernacle was set up and the fence around it.”

“It was something like a church, was it not, Mummy?”

“No dear; not in the slightest. Neither in the way it was built or in the purpose or use they made of it. A church is simply a house where people go to sing hymns and listen to a preacher who is supposed to teach them about God but who, far too often, talks of anything else. No one was ever permitted to enter the Tabernacle except the priest and he could go in only when he made a sacrifice to God, and he could go into the Most Holy only once a year and when God told the people to take the Tent down and go to some other place. The Tabernacle was the place where God lived among them. If they wished to ask some favour of God they could kneel outside the gate and pray or ask the priest to pray for them. They could bring a sacrifice or gift to God by taking it to the priest and getting him to kill it and offer it for a sacrifice. They might ask the priest to speak to God and tell Him of their desire.

“In Palestine the people had churches which they called synagogues. They were much like the churches of today but they did not pay one man to preach. They all went there on the sabbath and sang hymns and prayed, and any man there who wished could take the Bible and read part of it to the people and explain it. Then every year they must take sacrifices to the Tabernacle and have the year’s sins forgiven. When there was anything troubling them they could go to the elders and ask help or advice. If the elder could not answer they went to Moses, who would tell them what God wished them to do.”

“Why did they not have any churches in their camp, Mummy?”

“Because God was present with them and watching over them all the time. They could sing praises to Him in their own homes whenever they wished. Moses pictured Jesus and they must go to God through him, just as we can kneel in our room and ask God to do anything for us in Jesus’ name. In the Kingdom everyone will be able to go to Jesus in prayer or they will be able to go with all their troubles to the ‘Princes’, who will be their rulers. They will not go to God Himself, for He says, *‘I have set my King over my holy hill of Zion’* (that means the Church), and to Jesus God said, *‘Ask of me and I will give you the heathen for an inheritance and the uttermost parts of the earth for a possession.’* This means that all the earth will be under Jesus’ rule and He will deal with the people.”

“They will not be able to see Him though, will they, Mummy?”

“No, dear. He said, *‘Henceforth the world seeth me no more. But yet see me’*, meaning the people of this world would never see Him again for He would be like God, and *‘No man can see God and live.’* They would see the Princes whom He would set over the world and they would advise and help them.

“Do you think Jesus will send one of them here, Mummy?”

“One will be ruling over Canada, dear. Indeed, there may be many more than one here for Canada is a large country. Then those who have learned to know God and who are true to Him and His truth now, and are still living, will be teachers of the people everywhere. They will be in close touch with the Princes and will tell them of the people’s wishes. Jesus said, *‘Many shall come from the east and west and from the north and south and sit down with Abraham and Isaac and the prophets in the Kingdom of God.’*”

“I would like to be one of the teachers, Mummy. I would like to know and work with those Princes”, Linnet said thoughtfully.

“Just learn all you can, dear, and be as true to God as you can, and perhaps there will be a very special work for you in the Kingdom”, Mrs Grey answered. “Now, dear, your little friends will soon be home and you may go and play quietly with them.”

Shortly afterwards Mrs Grey heard sounds of young voices singing and found that her little daughter was playing Sunday School with her little friends and trying to teach them some of the things she had learned about God and His great Plan.

She smiled and murmured, “Oh God, bless and keep her and make her Thine own, and if it be Thy will grant her desire to be teacher in the world in the Kingdom.”

## **Chapter 25: The Service of God**

The High Priest stood with dripping knife in hand,  
The bullock for the sacrifice was slain.  
Young, strong and free, its life for sin was given.  
The last drop from the pulsing heart must drain.  
The High Priest sighs to think that life so free  
Must pay the price for man’s unthinking guilt.  
Yet – such the justice of our Mighty God,  
Sin must be cleansed and so blood must be spilt.

He takes the golden bowl, still warm with life  
And, passing underneath the flowing veil,  
Sprinkles the Holy Ark, while incense sweet  
Wreathes round it like the halo round a grail.  
God’s wrath appeased, atonement has been made.  
Through shedding blood alone can sin be cancelled.  
‘Tis life for life. The blood has washed away  
The penalty that on God’s books is pencilled.

“Mummy, once a long time ago you told me a story about a little girl that lived in the camp of the Tabernacle. I cannot remember the story very well and I would like to hear it again. Was it in the Bible?”

“No, dear one. It was just a little story that told how the people lived and showed how very different things were then to what they are now. I will try and see if I can remember the story”, Mrs Grey replied. She had finished the work for the evening and the study hour was over and now she had come to tuck her little daughter in for the night and to get a goodnight kiss.

“ I wish you would, Mummy. I always loved that story about the best of all the stories you told me.”

“Well, let me see how much I can remember. There was a family among the Children of Israel who had left Egypt. The father’s name was Obadiah, or we will call him that, for really I have forgotten his name. And for our story we will call the mother Sarah. I think the little girl was named Miriam.”

“No, Mummy. It was Rachel. I can remember that much”, Linnet corrected.

“Very well, Rachel it shall be. It is a good old Jewish name. The tent of Obadiah was set among thousands of other tents in plain view of the great mountain that was called Sinai. This mountain rose sheer and steep from the plains. There were steep cliffs that were pretty hard to climb and the mountainside was covered with small shrubs and trees and rocks. The top of the mountain was bare for the cloud from which God had spoken to the people was no longer there. It had moved to the open field where the Tabernacle had been set up and now it hovered over that wonderful tent to show the people that God was still in their midst and watching over them.

“The tents of the people had been moved so that they completely surrounded the Tabernacle and everyone could see it, or rather the top of it, for the fence of white linen curtains that surrounded the Court was about eight feet high so that no one could see over it. The curtains were stretched tight and fastened to the posts so that no one could go under them. Well, as I was saying, the tent of Obadiah was set among the other tents of his tribe and Rachel had been very much interested in the building of this tent which was to be a house for God to live in.

“It seemed wonderful to think that God was so close to them. Rachel loved to watch the cloud and to think of the wonderful Being who had spoken to them from it.”

“What was it like in the tents, Mummy?”

“Well you know, the outside of the tents was all black and ugly for they were made of goat skins sewed together but inside they had, usually, nice coloured curtains. They had mattresses or mats of thick wool for beds and often had pretty woollen blankets or rugs over them. The floor was often just sand or earth, though some had rugs to cover the floors also. The people seldom sat on chairs but squatted on the floor or lay on the beds. Some people had piles of furs and skins for couches.

“They made fireplaces of piles of stones like people do on the beach and they cooked their meals outside. They had earthenware pots for cooking in but they made cakes and cooked them on clean hot stones. It was like camping out all the time, and the children played in the shade of the tents. They had no toys like yours and their playthings were bows and arrows and home-made toys, pebbles and sticks. They made pets of the young lambs and goats and baby camels and played house with stones for dishes. One morning Rachel wakened up and sat up on her couch of rugs and skins and looked around her. The camp was strangely silent and her mother was sitting quietly in the door of the tent. Usually she was out gathering up manna for the day’s food. Rachel knew it was not the sabbath or rest day, so she said, ‘Where is our breakfast, Mummy? Are we not gathering manna this morning?’

“There is no manna this morning, Rachel. This is the day our great leader, Moses, has set aside as a day of fasting and atonement for our sins’, her mother replied. He has forbidden us to do any work today. You will find some manna cakes left from yesterday in the stone jar and you may have some of them for your breakfast.’

“What does fasting mean, Mummy? Linnet interrupted the story to ask.

“It means going without certain foods for a time. They were to do no cooking on that day, just eat the manna cakes that were left over and to think about their sins. Rachel got some manna cakes and nibbled them as she put on the clean clothes her mother had set out for her.

“What are we going to do today, Mother?’ she asked as she went to her mother’s side. ‘What sins have we done, Mother, that we should think of?’

“Really dear, I do not know. It seems that many things we do are not right. Moses is going to make an atonement to God so He will forgive us and overlook our sins.’

“What is an atonement, Mother’ Rachel asked.

“It is a sacrifice for sins, dear. You see, when we do anything that displeases God, the priest, Aaron, has to sacrifice some animal in our place so we will not be punished.’

“I do not see what I have done that is wrong, Mother. I do not see why any poor little animal has to die, even if I did do something wrong’, Rachel said in a puzzled tone.

“I do not really understand it all myself, dear. Here comes your father. Perhaps he can explain; ask him.’

“Obadiah came into the tent. He heard his wife’s words and asked, ‘What is this, Sarah? Who wants to ask me something? Why so solemn, little one? What is it you wish to know?’

“Rachel brushed the crumbs from her dress and said, ‘I want to know who sinned, and why just because someone did something naughty a little animal has to be killed. What good does that do? I want to know what is atonement.’

“Now that is a big question, or rather a lot of questions. First, who sinned? Well, it seems that the priests, the sons of Aaron, are the one who have brought trouble upon us this time. They tell me that the two sons of Aaron had been drinking some strong wine and while they were drunk they took their censers with strange fire and went into the Most Holy, the inner room of the Tabernacle where God’s power dwells. They defiled the Most Holy and God was very angry with them and killed them both.’

“Then their sin is paid for’, Sarah said. ‘Why should we fast and make atonement for them?’

“Because sin has entered the camp and must be cleansed. Moses had ordered an atonement for the people. Of course, someone is always breaking some of the laws.’

“I never thought they would be so hard to keep’, Sarah remarked. ‘They seem simple enough.’

“But father, you have not told me what atonement means’, Rachel said.

“When one has promised, as we all did, little one, that we would obey the laws God gave us and then disobey them, that one must be punished, dear. You see, God said if we kept His laws we would live but if we did not keep them we would die. God will sometimes accept the death of an animal in our place and let us try again. That is an atonement. Moses has set this day aside to offer sacrifices to God so that He may forgive us. If God will accept the death of the animal in our place, He will overlook our sins and let us live’, Obadiah explained. ‘God is so very good that He cannot look upon sinners or help them directly. We must try and keep His laws.’

“I heard God’s voice and saw the lightnings, father, but I could not understand His laws. What is it we must do to please God?’

“Well, dear, there are some laws you do not need to trouble your little head about till you are older. The first and most important law is that we must “Love the Lord God more than anything in the world and never make or have an image of anything or worship it.”

“An image is a figure of any bird or creature, is it not father?’

“Yes, dear. You know how many of the people in Egypt had little figures of the gods in their homes and they prayed to them and made offerings to them.’

“Yes, father, and they had figures of men with heads of birds and animals and fish and big bulls, and they killed their children sometimes and burned them as offerings to the gods. I know about that’, Rachel said.

“Well, God has forbidden us to do those things. He says He is the only true God, and we cannot make any figure to take His place.’

“That is why the Levites killed the people who took their clothes off and danced and gave offerings to the calf Aaron made, was it not, father?’

“Yes, dear. It was disobedience to God and they had broken their oath. If the Levites had not killed them we would all have died. They had promised never to do such things and they failed to keep the promise. God has also said we must never take anything that is not ours and we must not even wish for it, or covet it.’

“Was it then a sin when I took Eli’s cake yesterday, father?’

“Yes, dear. It was two sins for you first wished for it and then took it. So you broke two of God’s laws.’

“I did not know I was doing wrong, father. Let us go to the Tabernacle and give God something so He will not punish me.’

“Aaron is making an atonement for all our sins, dear. You must try to understand God’s laws and keep them in future’, her father answered. ‘Look child, there is one of the

Levites taking the young bullock to the Tabernacle to be sacrificed. It is to pay for the sin of the High Priest.'

"It seems funny that the Priest should sin, father, I thought he was a very good man.'

"There is no one who can keep the laws of God, child. Watch now and you will soon see the smoke of the burning bullock.'

"Why does God make laws for us if we cannot keep them?'

"We must not question the wisdom of God, dear. We must only learn His laws and try to keep them. We may be thankful that He has arranged that we can atone for our sins in this manner', Obadiah said solemnly. Rachel sat between her parents in the door of the tent and watched the smoke of the burning sacrifice. After a while she said, 'Father, I cannot see why anyone would want to make gods of wood or stone when they have such a great, wonderful God as we have. We can see the cloud and know He is watching over us from it. We know the wonderful things He does for us. He sent all those plagues to the Egyptians because they were mean to us and when they tried to catch us and kill us He made a road through the sea for us. He is not a bird or an animal or a fish.'

"If only the people would remember that, Rachel, they might be spared much pain and trouble', Obadiah said sadly, 'but they forget so quickly.'

"What will they be doing in the Tabernacle now, father?'

"I cannot say for sure, child. Eli told me that when they take the bullock into the Court and kill it, the High Priest must take its blood into the Most Holy place and sprinkle it on the Ark, where God's spirit rests like a bright light. It is called the "Mercy Seat" and when the blood is sprinkled there the sin is paid for.'

"Sarah had been sitting listening quietly and thinking. Now she said 'My cousin Elizabeth said that the Ark is very beautiful. She saw it while the men were working on it for her son had some carving to do. She said that it is a golden box with two beautiful angels kneeling on it. I cannot see what difference there is in making it and making a god.'

"The difference is that it is a seat, as it were, for the light that shows God's presence. It would be as wicked to worship it as to worship the calf, I should think. Even the Egyptians do not worship the temples where they keep their gods', Obadiah replied. He was none too sure that his wife was not herself resentful over the laws of God.

"What do we do after the sacrifice, father?' Rachel asked.

"Well dear, as I understand it, the bullock is to pay for Aaron's sins and those of his family. Then they will sacrifice a goat for the sins of the people. There will be other offerings too. When all the sacrifices have been made we will all go to the Tabernacle and then the High Priest will put on his beautiful garments and come out and give us God's blessing. Then we will know that all our sins are forgiven.'

"Rachel grew weary of the quietness and fell asleep with her head in her mother's lap and slept till it was time to go to the Tabernacle. Then her mother roused her and she

had another manna cake and then went with her parents to the open space around the Tabernacle where all the people were gathering. Soon the beautiful curtain at the front of the Court parted and they had a glimpse of the altar where the last of the sacrifice was still smouldering. Then Aaron and Moses came out and gave them God's blessing.

"Aaron looked very handsome in his beautiful robes and his white cap and golden crown, and the jewels in his breastplate glowed like fire. It was nice to feel that all their sins were forgiven, Rachel thought as, with her parents, she returned to the tent that evening. Her mother cooked a fine supper of quail and manna cakes and then Rachel played in the cool of the evening with her companions and the men went out to catch more quail for the next day.

"Rachel thought much about her father's words and made up her mind never to forget that God was watching, and to try and keep the laws and please Him. She would not take the other children's playthings and she would learn the laws of God and try to do what was right. It was nice to look up at the cloud and think of how He was there watching over the camp."

Linnet had been lying quietly listening and now she said softly, "I am glad we do not have to live like that, Mummy, Imagine not having a nice house and a soft bed and toys to play with. I think it would be terrible to think that every time I did something naughty some poor little animal would have to be killed. What is it that has made all the difference, Mummy?"

"It is all in the fact that Jesus paid for Adam's sin and stopped all those sacrifices, Linnet. He opened the way for us so we could go to God and ask Him to forgive us for Jesus' sake when we do wrong. The sacrifices were simply to show the people that something must die to pay for sin. No animal could take Adam's place and pay his ransom. Only a perfect man could do that and there had never been a perfect man to pay that debt before. It is because Jesus died that, if we are trusting Him, we can have our mistakes forgiven without any other sacrifice. Jesus wants us to try and be good and to do what will please God. God has given us many good things that people did not have then. We must always remember that *'Every good and perfect gift comes down from the Father of Light'*, and try to please Him in return for His kindness to us. We do not need a Tabernacle or sacrifices now; we can go to God no matter where we are and tell Him that we have made a mistake and are sorry, and He has promised to forgive us."

"I am glad I live now and not then, Mummy. I love to talk to God and feel that He hears me. It would be nice to have the cloud above us and to know His angel was there watching us though."

"We have something they did not have, though, dear. We can all read and we have the Bible and we know that even if there is no cloud that we can see, God is there just the same. We have the Word of God which says, *'He is faithful and just to forgive us our sins and to cleanse us from all unrighteousness.'* Now, dear, I must go and let you get off to sleep. Good night, Linnet, and may God bless my girlie and keep her safe." Mrs Grey kissed her little girl and turned out the light.



## Chapter 26: The High Priest and the Sacrifices

What tho' the way be narrow  
With storm clouds overhead  
And boulders strew the pathway  
Our weary feet must tread;  
Tho' briars snare our footsteps  
And mists obscure our way,  
We know it leads us onward  
To pure and perfect day.  
We have the Father's promise  
That bids all doubting cease.  
*"My presence shall go with you  
And I will give you peace."*

What matter all the trials,  
The weariness and loss  
Of earthly things, we still can sing  
Tho' heavy be our cross.  
Our Leader goes before us,  
He knows the way we take.  
We still can trust Him fully,  
He never will forsake.  
He shares our every burden  
And bids our joys increase.  
His presence shall go with us  
And He will give us peace.

So all the way to Canaan  
The glorious Promised Land,  
We'll follow where He leads us,  
A carefree, happy band.  
Storms break in fury o'er us,  
Yet the path is clear and plain.  
Our trials turn to blessings,  
And joy surmounts our pain.  
Our eyes fixed on our Leader  
We hear our Father say,  
*"My presence shall go with you  
Upon the pilgrim way."*

"Mummy, you know what you told me last night about the sacrifices in the Tabernacle", Linnet said the next morning. "Well, I found a picture in my Bible book of the High Priest in his beautiful clothes. Did he wear them when he was making the sacrifices?"

"No, Linnet. He wore a simple white robe for that purpose, one that could be washed. He would have spoiled those beautiful garments if he had worn them then."

"I will get the picture for you, Mummy. He must have looked pretty nice when he dressed up." Linnet went for the picture and brought it to her mother. Mrs Grey put her work aside to look at the picture.

"You know Linnet, dear, just as everything in the Tabernacle had a meaning, so all the sacrifices had a meaning too, and just so the robes the priest wore meant something.

When we understand what they meant we can see why God was so particular about the way they dressed.”

“I did not know He was, Mummy.”

“Indeed He was, Linnet. He told Moses just how every person that took part in the Tabernacle services was to be dressed.”

“Were there others beside Aaron, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear. Aaron was the High Priest and his sons were to be underpriests. You remember that God had said that every oldest son of every family was to be counted His? Well, after a while He made another arrangement and that was that the whole family or tribe of Levi, Jacob’s oldest son, was to be counted a nation of priests and to spend their time studying the law and teaching it to the people. Aaron was the oldest man in the Tribe of Levi and he was to be the High Priest and his sons were to do all the work of the Tabernacle when they moved. When he was sacrificing in the Tabernacle, Aaron was to wear a plain white linen robe and the priests who helped him must also wear plain white robes and bonnets on their heads. All this was part of the picture.”

“What did it mean, Mummy?”

“When Aaron was making the sacrifices he pictured Jesus when he was on earth and then he wore plain white linen clothes to show that Jesus was then just a man like the other priests, but his white clothes showed that He was a pure and perfect man. Aaron did not wear a bonnet for he was the High Priest and the others had to obey him. This showed that Jesus is our Leader or High Priest and we are under His orders. He has to think for us. The bonnets the underpriests wore pictured that the High Priest was the head and they must obey him and not try to be leaders.”

“What did the beautiful robes in this picture mean, Mummy?”

“Each part has a meaning, dear. When Aaron wore these robes he pictured Jesus after He was raised from the dead and went back to God. He was then ‘*given a name that is above every other name*’, as the Apostle said. That means He was given a higher place in heaven than anyone except God. He was made a great Prince and given life like God had, so He could never die again.”

“Just like Pharaoh made Joseph a prince, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear. Joseph pictured how Jesus would be made the great Prince next to God in power and glory.”

“Who did the other priests picture, Mummy?”

“They pictured the true Church who give their lives to Jesus and agree to do what He wishes them to”, Mrs Grey explained. “Let us take a look at this picture and see if we can tell what Aaron’s beautiful robes pictured. First he wore a white linen robe or tunic. It was made very plain. This, of course, pictured Righteousness, and it was fastened with a girdle or tie of white linen to picture that Jesus was God’s righteous servant. All servants

wore these girdles. Then, over this, he wore a blue robe. Can you tell me what blue means, dear?"

"The blue of the faith that conquers strife", Linnet quoted.

"Yes. Blue was for faithfulness and this robe had a wide band of beautiful embroidery as you can see in your picture. It was a design of fruit and flowers to picture the fruits of Christian character. Love, joy, peace, goodness, faith, knowledge, humility, meekness and kindness; all the characteristics that are like God. Over this there was a straight garment called an ephod. It was to be made of two narrow oblong strips of cloth woven of blue, red, purple and white threads all twined together. I am sure you remember what the colours meant. White for purity, blue for faith, red for the ransom and purple for royalty. These two parts of the ephod were fastened together on the shoulders with golden clasps. You can see them in the picture. What does gold mean, dear?"

"The gold Divine'. It meant things that belong to God, Mummy."

"Yes, dear. Now these two parts of the ephod pictured the two parts of the Bible and showed how all God's Plan depended on Jesus and the golden clasps that fastened them showed that God had arranged that all the fulfilment of His Plan would depend on His own dear Son. In the front of the ephod there was to be a beautiful breastplate. See, here it is in your picture. It was made of a fold of the same cloth, and one half was plain but the other half had a beautiful jewelled design set in gold. You can see it here in the picture. There were three rows of square cut jewels, all different, and in each was carved in Hebrew the name of one of the twelve tribes of Israel. The breastplate was very beautiful. It was folded like a book. One half was plain except for two gold rings, and laces were run through the rings which fastened the breastplate to the ephod in the front and to the gold clasps."

"What was it for, Mummy? Why did it have the names of the tribes on it?" Linnet asked.

"Well, dear one, the breastplate pictured the Law of God. There are two parts to that law – the letter and the spirit. That means you can keep the law exactly and yet not have the spirit of the law. You might never, never make an image and yet worship gold or money or some person. You would then never have actually broken the law about idols yet have broken the true spirit or meaning of it. So you might never take anything that belonged to another person and yet break the law by telling something about that person that would mean the loss of his good name. There is an old saying that goes like this, 'He who steals my purse steals trash, but he who takes away my good name robs me of something that does him no good but leaves me poor indeed.'"

"But that would be breaking the law about telling falsehood, Mummy."

"Not necessarily, dear. A story that is true can do far more harm than a lie. It is unkind to tell even the truth about people if it hurts them. So you see, we can break the real spirit of the law and yet perhaps not break the letter of it. So with the command about the sabbath. We may not keep the seventh day, as some count it, yet keep the first and so keep the spirit of that law. Then again Jesus showed that it was right to do things to help others on the sabbath even when it might mean a little work. He said, 'If your horse fell into a pit you would not leave it there to die because it was Sunday. You would help it out and not be breaking the law.'"

“So the breastplate pictured the two parts of the law of God. The ‘letter of the law’ was pictured by the plain side, which was folded under to show that we cannot develop the fruit or the beauty of character by keeping it. We must try to have the love and kindness and peace and joy of the spirit.”

“Was that what the jewels meant, Mummy?”

“Not exactly. The breastplate showed that God’s law would develop two classes of people, and that one by trying to simply keep the letter of the law would not have any real beauty, while the other class would try and keep the spirit of the law and become like Jesus. The Jewish nation did try to keep the law and some were very strict about all the little things, but at heart were cruel and unkind, and so they failed to get God’s blessing. The Apostle said, *‘These obtained not the promises.’* The true Church of God which was to be chosen from the world would try to follow Jesus and to live up to the better laws, *‘Thou shalt love the Lord thy God with all thy heart and with all thy soul and with all thy strength, and thy neighbour as thyself.’* By doing this they would gain God’s love and favour and the promises of God would be theirs. The jewels are *‘the exceeding great and precious promises by which we may become heirs to the divine nature.’*”

“What does that mean, Mummy?”

“That those who give their lives to Jesus and try to follow Him will be His Bride and be like Jesus, great spirit beings who will live in heaven, for they will have the promises.”

“But why were the names of the twelve tribes carved in the stones, Mummy?”

“Because there would also be twelve disciples of Jesus who would be the leaders of twelve groups of true Christians in the true Church, dear. They would take the place of the sons of Jacob who failed to really serve God”, Mrs Grey explained. “The colours of the ephod had the same meaning as colours always have, and showed that Jesus would be pure, faithful and God’s Son and would pay the ransom for us. He had a tie or girdle to show that he would be God’s servant and do His will. On the bottom of the ephod there are little bells and tiny golden fruit, and the bells drew people’s attention to the fruit. Then he wore sandals which are called ‘The sandals of peace.’ He also wore a cap of white linen with a golden plate that had the words ‘Holiness to the Lord’ on it; it was like a golden crown and was to show that Jesus would serve God and give glory to Him.”

“When did the priest dress up in those beautiful clothes, Mummy” Linnnet asked. “You said he did not wear them all the time.”

“No, dear. He wore them only on special occasions just as the king wears his beautiful robes only for great ceremonies. Once a year they had the special service that was known as the atonement. Then there was a holiday for everyone and the people were to think about the mistakes they had made all through the past year. In the morning the priest took a young bullock and put his hands on it to show that it was taking his place and the place of his family and was to die to cover the mistake they had made in the year that had passed since the last atonement day. Then, as I told you before, they had to kill it and burn the body on the altar. The horns, hooves and skin were to be burned outside the camp because they smelled so nasty when they were burning. Then they killed a goat and did the same with it. This was to show that the true Church, which it

pictured, would follow Jesus and share all His trials and sufferings and even die, like He did.

“Then another goat was taken and the priest was to put all the sins of the rest of the people on it and send it away out into the hills where it was turned loose to wander in the hills for the rest of its life, After all the sacrifices were over, the High Priest put on these beautiful robes and came out and told the people that God had forgiven all their sins. He gave them God’s blessing. Then he was a picture of Jesus when He comes to set up His Kingdom and forgives all the people’s mistakes and gives them God’s blessing.

“All the other sacrifices were simply offerings for people’s special sins, or thank offerings to show that they were grateful to God for His goodness, or else other pictures of Jesus and the true Church”, Mrs Grey explained. “The priests lived and dressed like the rest of the people but they were allowed to keep some of the offerings that were brought to the Tabernacle for their own use. The people were told they must bring a tenth part of everything they earned or raised or grew in their gardens to the Tabernacle and give it to the priests, part for sacrifices and part to pay the priest for teaching the people God’s laws. The priests must be able to read and write and they were to read God’s Word to the people and explain His laws, because most of the people could not read for themselves. It is different now. God wants us each to learn for ourselves all that we can about His Word. That was why He had laws made that every person must go to school and learn to read and write. Nothing ever happens on this earth without God’s notice.

“Before the time came when Jesus was to return to set up His Kingdom it did not matter so much if the people could not read. God always saw that those whom He wished specially to be His servants or His children had all the knowledge they needed and He left the rest of the people to get along as well as they could. When the time was coming close for Jesus to come back and rule the earth God said, through His prophets, *‘Knowledge shall be increased.’* This was so that all who really wished to understand His Word could read it for themselves and study it. He had some of His own true people see that the Bible was printed in every language and that everyone who wanted to read it could get copies of it. Then He sent other servants to help them understand it.”

“Is that why we spend so much time studying the Bible, Mummy?” Linnet asked.

“Yes, dear. We wish to be His servants and obey Him and not to be like the servants in the story I told you who hired another man to read the king’s message and tell them what was in them. We love God and want to be sure we are doing what our Master wishes us to do so that when He comes to set up His Kingdom He may say to us, as the Bible says He will, *‘Well done, good and faithful servants. You have been faithful in a few things, I will make you ruler over many things.’*

“I think that is about as good a verse as you could have to learn for today. Now, dear, it is nearly bedtime. Better run off and get ready for bed”, Mrs Grey said as she took up her work again.

## **Chapter 27: Canaan is Reached at Last**

After the storm – the calm,  
After the wind – sweet peace,

After the darkness and despair  
The blessed, sweet release.  
After the sorrow – joy,  
After the toil comes rest.  
After our testings all are o'er  
The Homeland of the blest.

“Mummy, is all the Bible about the Children of Israel? It seems to me that no other people are mentioned in it. Why is that? Is it because God always used them when He wanted to make pictures for us?” Linnet asked one winter day. Autumn had passed away and the cold, rainy days had come. Soon it would be Christmas again.

“Yes, dear. That is the reason. All the Old Testament is about people of Israel. It is like a history. God was not taking special care of any other nation for He had chosen the Israelites to be His own special care, just as when you are going to give a play at school your teacher picks out the best singers and the finest speakers and most clever actors for the parts she wishes.”

“She never chooses me, Mummy. I guess it is because I am not very good at anything of that sort.” Linnet felt rather neglected.

“What does it matter whether the teacher chooses you or not, dearest? God has chosen you to train for His work and that is far more important. The school play will be forgotten before the holidays are over but the Kingdom and its work will go on forever. God's special servants are seldom very good at earthly things. They have no time for them. They do not even find them very interesting. Moses could have been a great prince in Egypt if he had cared less for God's people or for His plans and purposes. As it was, he gave up his opportunity for earthly greatness and had to go and keep sheep in the hills till God was ready to use him. The princes of Egypt are all forgotten but Moses will never be forgotten. It is far better to never have any place in this world and to be trained for God's work than to have the finest part in the best play that ever was written. You cannot sing very well but your heart can be filled with songs of praise and knowledge of God. There is a story that I once heard that has always been a comfort to me. I am like you, dear, and my voice simply will not do as I want it to.”

“What was the story, Mummy?”

“In the early days, Linnet, it was thought that in order to be a good Christian a man must go away somewhere where he would be alone or with other people like himself and spend all his time in study. He must give up all his friends and shut himself away in a big place called a monastery. There he must live on certain foods and spend all his time in prayer or study and in singing hymns. He must dress in queer and uncomfortable clothes and sleep on hard boards and do many strange things. They thought that this would please God. Of course, it was because they did not understand God's Word.

“Many of these people, who are called monks, really loved and desired to serve God, and their mistaken ideas were often caused by the false teachings of the early churches. It is said that in one of these monasteries there was a very good man who really loved God and tried to do what would please Him and that he had found favour with God, not because he went to the monastery but because he was sincere. This poor man could not sing any better than you or I can. Well, every year at Christmas the monks gathered in

their chapel or church and sang praises to God. The others were good singers and were quite proud of their voices but the poor old monk just wished to praise God. His voice annoyed the others and they scolded him a great deal about his singing till one year the poor man decided not to sing at all. He felt that God would never miss his singing and the others would be able to praise God better if he stopped trying.

“Well, so the story goes, that Christmas he did not sing a note. It hurt him not to sing God’s praises but he felt God would like the hymn better if it sounded nicer. That night he thought an angel came to his room and said, ‘We were disappointed to miss the hymns of praise to God this year. Why did you not praise Him? God sent me to see what is the matter.’

“But they all sang!’ said the old man. ‘The hymns never sounded nicer. You see, my voice is so broken and I cannot keep a tune. I left the singing this year to those who have good voices.’

“So that was what was wrong. Did you not know that the other monks sing only to show off their fine voices to each other? They do not love God or praise Him in their hearts, so their songs never get up to heaven at all. It is only the praise that comes from the heart that reaches God’s ears.”

“I am glad you told me that, Mummy. I have always felt sorry I cannot sing nicely but I guess it does not matter if God likes you.”

“God wants the praise that comes from the heart”, Mrs Grey explained.

“Did the Children of Israel really love God, Mummy? Was that why He chose them?”

“No, darling. They were a stubborn and disobedient people. Any race would serve His purpose and they were a bit better than the others because they did not worship idols as much. The real reason He chose them was because they were the descendants of Abraham and He was just keeping His promise. That is the real reason God is training you too, Linnet. Not because you are better than other children but because you come from a family who have always served God. Your grandparents on both sides loved and served God and your own parents have given themselves to Him, so you are specially His till you are old enough to decide for yourself. Then you may choose whether it’s best to be God’s Own child or to go your own way. He said, ‘*The promises are to you and to your children and to as many as the Lord our God shall call.*’ That is why you must never get the idea that you are better than others, any more than the Children of Israel were. You are fortunate in having a Christian family and the teaching of Truth and should try to be a good and kind girl and show God that you do appreciate His favour.”

“Did the Children of Israel try to please God, Mummy, or did they still disobey Him after He gave them the Ark and the Tabernacle and food and everything they needed?”

“No, dear. Their history is one long list of failures and mistakes. They lived there at the foot of Mount Sinai for over a year. The Tabernacle was completed and erected and the worship of God was carried on just as God had commanded. The Manna proved a very satisfying food and they became strong and well rested after the years of hard and unpaid toil in Egypt. Then the day came when the cloud was seen to lift up off the

Tabernacle. That was the signal for them to start again on their journey. They packed all their things and the sons of Levi took the Tabernacle down and packed it too.

“First the priests had to go into the Holy Place and cover the Ark with a special cover that would protect it and also hide it from sight. Then the golden table and altar and lampstand were also covered and rods were slipped through the rings on the sides of the Ark to carry it. Then all the golden vessels were packed carefully. After that the curtains were taken down and folded up and tied in bundles. Then the copper altar and laver were also covered and all the golden boards were made into bundles and covered. When everyone was ready and had all their things packed in carts drawn by oxen or donkeys, the people started again on their journey. First went the priests carrying the Ark, and the cloud seemed to hover always over it.

Levites followed with all the parts of the Tabernacle, and then came the other tribes with all their tents and furniture and cattle. They walked slowly along, resting at night. The manna still fell every morning but the quail did not come and soon the people began to complain and grumble again. They were such a bunch of babies that they could not go for a few days without meat.

“The Egyptians who had left their own country to share in the blessings promised to the people of God were the leaders in the complaints. They wanted to get all the blessings God was going to give His people but they were not willing to suffer a little to gain them. Soon they had many of the people crying out because there was no meat for them. Moses was very angry. God was angry also and He sent a fire that burned around the camp and many people were killed.

“Moses was so worried that he went to God and said, ‘Why do you make me responsible for these people as if I was their father? They are grown men; why should I be like a nurse to them? Where can I get them meat to eat. It is too big a task for me.’

“Then the Lord replied, ‘Bring the seventy elders to me and I will make them share the burden with you and will give them wisdom. Bring them to the Tabernacle and I will come down and talk to them, and say to the people that I will send them so much meat they will be sick of it because they have despised me.’

“That night there came a strong wind and it brought quail in such numbers that they fell on the ground and lay there helpless. There were so many that they were three feet deep all over the camp. Perhaps it was because the people ate too much that after gathering and cooking them they took sick and many of those who had complained died.

“Shortly after this, as they were travelling toward Canaan, Moses’ sister Miriam began to complain about Moses’ wife. As I told you before, Moses had married a dark-skinned woman and Miriam felt herself to be much better than any black woman. She made nasty remarks and soon Aaron also was complaining, and saying he and Miriam were just as well able to lead the people as Moses was. Now it was bad enough for the people to make trouble but for his own brother and sister to turn against him seemed almost more than Moses could stand. God was angry with them for they should have been helping Moses. Aaron should have known better and ought to have reproved Miriam, who was the one who started the trouble. God called them both to come to the Tabernacle and He came down in the cloud and said to them, ‘If there is a prophet among you I will speak to him in a dream or by a vision, but Moses is faithful to me



always and I speak to him face to face. How is it that you were not afraid to speak against the one I have chosen?’

“Then the cloud lifted up and went back to its place, but when they turned to look at each other Moses and Aaron saw that Miriam was all white and withered by leprosy. Aaron felt that he was much to blame for he had not been strong enough to make Miriam behave, so he pleaded with Moses, ‘Oh my Lord, I beg you do not let her bear the punishment for this sin. Let her not be like a dead person for she is our sister.’

“Moses felt very sorry, for he loved his sister, and he prayed to God to make her well again. God said she must go out into the hills alone and stay there for a week as a punishment, and after that He would make her better. The people waited and camped there until Miriam was well again, then they journeyed toward Canaan.”

“I guess Miriam did not make any more trouble after that, Mummy.”

“No, dear. Miriam was really sorry for her sin and so was Aaron. Soon after that they came to the borders of the Land of Canaan and also to the end of this one of God’s pictures. Now God intended to change the picture and also to show that only those who have great faith in God and trust Him fully can ever have a part in the Kingdom He has promised. He told Moses to choose out men from each of the tribes and send them into the Land of Canaan to see what the country was like and whether they must expect much trouble in conquering those who lived in it and who were very wicked.

“Twelve men were chosen, one from each of the tribes. They went secretly into the country and spent forty days travelling through it. Canaan was a wonderful country. There were cities and beautiful gardens and lots of fine fruit. But, of course, there were many heathen people also living in it. God had promised that He would drive these heathen people out of the country because they were so very sinful and all worshipped the false gods. However, the spies saw some giants there.”

“Were they really giants, Mummy? I thought that there never were any giants after the flood”, Linnet said.

“There have always been people who have grown much bigger than ordinary people because of some disease of the glands. One such man lives in the United States. He is quite young but is well over eight feet tall and has to have a special house to live in. Just so, there have been dwarfs also. There was one family in Canaan and this disease must have been in the family for the men grew very large and the spies saw some of them. They thought they were the sons of the evil angels and they were frightened. Their faith was very small anyway and they were cowards. They had heard of the stories of the terrible things done before the flood by the sons of the angels, and that scared them.

“When they got back to the camp two of the spies said, ‘It is the most wonderful country. The fields are full of wheat and grain and fruits of every kind, just as God said. Let us go at once and take it, for God will be with us.’ But the other spies said, ‘Truly it is a wonderful country. See all the fruit we have gathered to let you know what grows there. But the people are all giants and so very big that we felt like grasshoppers beside them. We cannot fight them. They are “Nephilim” (That was what they called the sons of the angels.)

"It was useless for Caleb and Joshua to try and tell the people that they had seen only a couple of very big men and all the rest were like themselves. The report of the cowards had frightened the people and the people cried for fear and terror. They were so cowardly and foolish and so lacking in faith that when morning came they gathered together and said, 'We are all going right back to Egypt and we are going to choose someone else to lead us.'

"Moses and Aaron said, 'God will go with us and we can conquer the land in His strength.' Joshua and Caleb also tried to get the people to go on but they were so frightened they would not listen, and they gathered up stones and would have killed their leaders. Then God's angel came down and the glory of God shone like a great fire over the Tabernacle, and God said to Moses, 'How long shall I be patient with these disobedient people? How long will it be before they learn to believe and trust me? I will destroy them all and raise up from your children a race of faithful people.'

"Moses begged God not to kill all the people, not because they deserved His blessing but because all the people of the countries around would think God had failed. He said, 'Oh Lord, you are so kind and loving and merciful, please forgive the people even as you have forgiven them before.' Moses prayed so earnestly and the people were now frightened by the knowledge that they had made their great protector angry. Then God said to Moses, 'I will forgive them for your sake, even though they have been so disobedient. Nevertheless, they shall never see the land I promised to give to their fathers. Their children shall have the land and Caleb and Joshua, who were faithful, shall lead them to it, but as for these people, not one of them shall ever enter the land. Every one who is twenty years old or older shall die here in the wilderness for I will turn them back and make them live in the wilderness one year for every day the spies were in Canaan. For forty years they shall wander in the wilderness because they would not believe me or trust me in spite of all the wonders I have shown them. They shall die of hunger and thirst and sickness, and when all who were slaves in Egypt are dead I will bring their children into Canaan and give it to them.' Then God caused those cowards who had persuaded the people to disobey and rebel against God to take a terrible sickness and die there.

Now when Moses told the people that God would not let them go into Canaan they at once decided that they would go anyway. So the next morning they gathered together and said they were going to take the country themselves. Moses said, 'Will you never understand that you cannot do anything without God's help? You have made Him so angry by your lack of faith and your disobedience that He will not go with you or help you and you will all be killed if you persist in going up to fight.' Still the people had not learned their lesson and they went up anyway. Many of them were killed.

"It is here that this picture ends. In those few years God had shown how in the Kingdom of God, when Jesus is ruling over the earth, the people will not all be willing to obey Him and even when they have His just laws there will be many lacking in faith and obedience. Some will want to go back to the old ways and methods that have caused so much suffering here. The two years in the camp showed how, while the people of the earth keep God's laws and live under His care, He will feed and clothe and bless them and His power will shield them, but when the time comes for them to possess the earth there will be many, especially among the worldly of our days, who will rebel against God's righteous commands. These will all die and never gain the glorious things that lie ahead for those who truly serve and trust God. Satan will be allowed to tempt them

again and they will try to go back to the evil things of our days and will be turned back to die, but Jesus and His true followers, pictured by Joshua and Caleb, will finally lead all the people who are willing to serve God into His Kingdom. Then all creatures will serve God faithfully.

“That is one picture. The other is that Moses pictured the Law and the people pictured the Jewish nation to whom all the promises of God were given and who failed to gain the promises because they had not enough faith in God. The fulfilment of this picture came when Jesus came to earth the first time and offered to lead the Jewish nation and to be their King and give to them the blessing of God. The rulers of the people refused to obey God and turned on Jesus and killed Him, just as they tried to kill Moses who pictured their Law, and Aaron who pictured Jesus, so along ago.

“God wished to show that He knew that the Jewish people would fail because of their lack of faith and would not gain the blessings promised. They would be turned back into the world and would live for many years as wanderers and strangers and would suffer many things, but God would not forget them for He would send His own dear Son, Jesus, their Messiah, at last to lead them into the Promised Land.

“The Jewish people were afraid of the great giants of wealth and power and feared that their nation would be destroyed by the Romans if they followed Jesus, so they killed their King. They did not gain anything by it for the Romans came and destroyed their land and killed many of them and drove the rest back to wander, without a home or a country, for nearly two thousand years.

“Joshua pictured Jesus at His second coming and showed how He will take the place of their old Law (typified by Moses) and lead them back into Canaan, the rich and fertile land God promised them. Then it will be true that *‘As truly as I live, the whole world shall be filled with the glory of God.’* When Jesus came the first time the angels said, *‘Behold, I bring you good tidings of great joy that shall be to all people.’* But they did not tell us then how long it would be before that great time of joy should come.”

## **Chapter 28: Pictures from Israel’s Wanderings**

### **Mispah**

The Lord watch ever between us. What joy and peace it would mean  
If, whenever we met with each other the dear Lord stood between.  
For who is it that condemneth? It is God that justifies!  
Oh, could we but view each other through the Father’s loving eyes.

On the ark two golden angels knelt always face to face  
And a glory shone between them that lighted the Holy Place.  
Beaten out of a slab of gold by a faulty, human hand  
Perchance those golden angels close inspection would not stand,

For no work of man is perfect. No matter how hard he tries  
In all his great endeavours some imperfection lies.  
Do you think the Shekinah glory picked out each faulty line,  
Or with a reflected glory made those golden angels shine?

I am sure that the Father’s glory lighted each carven face

Till no one who looked upon them one erroneous line could trace.  
So if we keep His spirit, forever twixt thee and me,  
Whenever we meet each other His beauty we will see.

“Have you any more stories for me, Mummy, or was the one you told me last night the last of God’s pictures? Linnet asked, sitting down on the little stool at her mother’s feet. They had finished the evening’s work and Daddy was busy writing letters. Mrs Grey smiled.

“Well, dear, we have nearly finished the wilderness pictures but the Old Testament is filled with beautiful types which really belong to a separate book. The people had many strange experiences in the forty years that they had to wander in the wilderness. These are really part of this story. The meaning had changed when the people were turned back from Canaan. Up till then they showed what would happen during the thousand years that Jesus would reign over the earth. They did not show, however, how those who obeyed and were faithful would reach the Kingdom God had promised. God knew that they would not gain their reward till Jesus came to set up His Kingdom. God turned the people back and caused them to show what would happen after Jesus’ first coming, when Israel refused to have Him and killed their King. Now Israel was to picture the Church of God, not just those who were true and faithful but all who claimed to be His. Turning them back from Canaan showed two things, first, that those who disobeyed Jesus would die and miss the blessings, and second, that the Jewish nation would fail for lack of faith to gain the promises of God.”

“It seems too bad that they could not get into Canaan after they had travelled so far, Mummy. Could not God have just made them good?” Linnet asked. “Then they would not have had to go back and wait all that time.”

“There is nothing God **cannot do**, dear. But there are some things that He **will not** do. You know, if He had wished He could have made people like machines that could not do anything wrong. There are people now who make what they call robots which are like men but never think. They can do many things when they are told but no one could ever love a robot and it has no power to love. God wished to have a world full of people who could understand Him and love Him. There is no merit in doing something you cannot help. No one would ever praise you for breathing. You cannot help it. So if God had made people so they could not do anything wrong, He could not love them for their goodness. They would be like a machine. If I had a little machine girl I might wind her up and send her down town for me and she might go right down and get what I wanted and never stop to play with other children or lose my purse, but I would not love her for it. She could not do anything different.”

“It was nice of you not to scold me for losing it, Mummy. I knew I should not stop and play. I just loved you for being so nice about it.”

“Then it was worth losing it if it made my little girl love me, and that is worth more than a purse”, Mrs Grey smiled. “It gave me a chance to show how much I loved you and gave you a chance to see that I loved you. That is the way it was with God, dearest. He wanted to give us a chance to show our love and He wanted people He could love. There were other reasons also. First, there was the picture He was making. That picture must show how the Jewish people would come right to the gate of the Kingdom and then lose it because they lacked faith and have to be sent out into the wilderness to wander

as strangers till they learned their lessons. Then, God never allows people to be punished unless they are very wicked and He knew that the people who were living in Canaan could be worse than they were then but that in forty years they would be too bad to save and He intended to use the people of Israel to punish them. God could see ahead and He knew that they were not trying to be good. Perhaps there were some too good to be let suffer so He left them a little longer. There was still another reason for turning the Israelites back. People who have always been slaves have never had to learn to think for themselves. They have learned to suffer silently under the oppression of their masters and to feel helpless and unable to do anything.

“Others are trained to be soldiers and to face hardships uncomplainingly, but the slaves never fight. God knew that the wicked people who were living in Canaan would try to prevent the Israelites from taking the country and would gather armies to fight them. He knew that the children and young people among the Israelites would learn to endure hardship and to make the best of things. They would have to get food in the wilderness and to fight wild beasts, and they would grow strong and brave. They would be away from Egypt and its false gods and would learn to trust Him. God wanted people who would be good and do what was right because it was right. Suppose I had two little girls and one was very gentle and good and kind by nature while the other was hot-tempered and selfish. Suppose we planned to go for a picnic and when we were all ready it began to rain. The good little girl would say, ‘Well, it can’t be helped. We will go another day.’ That would be just her nature. But if the other little girl felt just terrible but because she knew it would add to Mother’s worries she just tried her very best not to make any fuss and choked back her tears, going away by herself to try and fight her temper, I would know that she had won a victory the good little girl did not know anything about. It is always the one who has the temper and who really fights and often wins that we have the most sympathy for. Our natures are given to us when we are born and we must try and make the most of them for God.

“The Children of Israel had grumbled and scolded and fussed at having to live on manna for two years, now they had to live on it for forty years. It was the very best food to make them well and strong. Some of the people were so angry that they decided to rebel against Moses and to choose a leader for themselves, so they went around among the people and talked against the leader God had chosen, and soon had one hundred and fifty strong men who were willing to follow them. These men were well known and popular among the people and they went together to Moses and Aaron and said, ‘You are taking far too much upon yourselves. Everyone in the camp is set aside for the service of God just as much as you are and God is with them just as much as He is with you. You have no right to make yourselves leaders.’

“Moses knew that God was the real leader and that He would be very angry with them. He said, ‘God Himself will show who is His and who is holy. He knows whom He has chosen and will give a sign to everyone that all may know whom He wishes to lead the people. Tomorrow let all of you take censors such as are used in the Tabernacle and put coals of fire in them and God will show when you come before Him whom He chooses. You are all of you His people, sons of Levi, men of the tribe God has chosen to be priests of His temple and to stand before Him and offer the sacrifices of the people. What more do you wish?’

“Two of the leaders of the rebellion refused to come when Moses told them to and said, ‘Who do you think you are? You cannot give us orders. You would get us up there and then punish us but you promised to bring these people to Canaan and you did not do it.’

“Moses told them all to bring their censers to the Tabernacle and to call all the people to see what God would do and how He would show His choice. The people wanted to see what would happen so they all gathered in the field in front of the Tabernacle the next morning. The glory of God appeared over the Tabernacle and it was as though the whole cloud was on fire. Then the voice of God spoke to Moses and Aaron and said, ‘Separate yourselves from the people so that I may destroy them all for they are always disobedient and rebellious.’ But Moses and Aaron pleaded with God not to destroy all the people. Then God said, ‘Tell all the rest of the people to move their tents away from those of the leaders of the rebellion.’ The people obeyed and all moved their tents away and then the three leaders, Dathan, Koran and Abiram, stood in the door of their tents and their wives and children with them. Then Moses said to the people, ‘You will know by what happens now whether I have done these things by myself or whether God has been your real leader. If God is with me and is telling me what you must do, then the earth will open up and swallow all the rebels up.’

“Almost before Moses had finished what he was saying there was a great earthquake and the three tents and all the people in them fell into a great hole that opened under them. In a moment not a trace of them was left. The people were terribly frightened and turned to run away but lightning flashed from the cloud and killed those who had taken part in the rebellion against Moses. They were all carrying the copper censers and Moses told the people to gather them up and melt the copper and make a covering for the altar with it.”

“I guess the people did as they were told after that, Mummy”, Linnet said.

“You would think so, wouldn’t you, dear? But the next morning some of them went around grumbling and saying that Moses and Aaron had killed the rebels themselves and that the rebels were good men and servants of God. While they were still accusing Moses and Aaron the fire appeared again and Moses knew that God was going to punish them still more. He called to Aaron, ‘Go quickly and offer a sacrifice to God for an atonement for the people’s sins or they will all die.’ Indeed, already many of the people had taken sick with a terrible disease. Before Aaron could get the sacrifice ready, fourteen thousand and seven hundred people died of the plague.

“As soon as the sacrifice was made the sickness stopped. Then Moses called the people and told them to take a dry rod or staff to represent each tribe and to carve in it the name of the head of that tribe. There were to be twelve rods in all and each was to have the name of a leader and the tribe of which he was the head carved on it. Moses said the twelve rods must be taken into the Tabernacle and placed in front of the ark that night and that God would cause the rod of the man whom He chose to be the High Priest for the people to blossom in the night. Now you know how it would take a dry stick you picked up outside to blossom, don’t you?”

“It would never blossom, Mummy, It would be dead.”

“That is right. But the next morning Moses went into the Tabernacle and brought out the rods for them to see. There was one that had not only budded but had flowered and had

young almonds on it. It was Aaron's rod and they could see his name carved in it just as they had seen him cut it in. This sign convinced the people that God Himself had chosen Moses and Aaron to lead them and that it would be wiser and better to obey them. After that there was very little trouble in the camp. They went from place to place, staying in one spot till the cloud rose up from the Tabernacle, then following it till it stopped again. In this way they came in time to the Wilderness of Zin, and there Miriam, Moses' sister, died. When they had been there some time the water dried up and they could not find enough for their herds and flocks. They went to Moses and complained to him and he went to ask God what to do about it.

"God answered and said, 'There is a large rock over there. Go and speak to it and water will come out of it to meet the people's need.'

"Now Moses was old and tired and discouraged and he had grown weary of the people's complaints, and for the first time in all the years he disobeyed God. He said angrily to the people, 'Hear now, you rebels! Must I bring water out of this rock again for you?' Then he struck the rock with his rod in his temper. Water poured out of the rock but God was not pleased with Moses."

"I guess anyone would get angry with those people, Mummy", Linnet said.

It was not only that Moses was angry, dear. He took the glory to himself that belonged to God. Then, too, Moses was the leader of the people and stood before them as a pattern of godliness and as the representative of God, and it would not do for him to forget for all the people followed him. God reproved hi for his mistake and told him that because he had failed to give the glory to God he would never enter Canaan. He would just see the land and then he would die.

"Moses did not complain. Perhaps he realised what a heavy task it would be for an old man and was glad to know that his work was over."

"But I thought God always forgave those who were sorry when they had made a mistake, Mummy", Linnet said.

"He does, dear, and we will see that He had good reason for not letting Moses lead the people into Canaan. He forgave him and Moses is one of those who will be the princes and rulers in the Kingdom. God knew, however, that Moses was too old to lead the people into Canaan and He has a great reward in store for him in His own time."

"What did it mean, Mummy, and was Aaron's rod a picture, too?"

"Yes, dear. The rebellion in the camp pictured the fact that there would always be those who claimed to be Christians who would want to rule the Church of God, and these God would punish. He will make Christ the ruler over the church. Aaron's rod showed God's choice and it was placed in the Ark, which you will remember was a type of Christ. It showed that Jesus would keep the Law and the true Church would reign with Him over all the earth.

"The rock pictured Christ Jesus, just as it did the first time Moses got water for the people that way. This time, however, Moses was told to speak to the rock, not to strike it with his rod, for Jesus would die only once and by His death would show us the truth of

God's Word. Moses disobeyed God and struck the rock again, grumbling because he himself had to get water for the people.

"There are some people who claim to teach and know God's Word who say that every time a person sins Jesus has to die again and who claim that they have the power to kill Him as a sacrifice for the people's sins. It is necessary only to go to God through Jesus to ask for forgiveness and for the knowledge of His truth and then to read and study His Word. Jesus does not have to suffer again to bring the truth to us. So Moses made a big mistake and changed the picture. In this he might have been meant to show that some would claim Jesus' death was not enough to cover all sin. Those who teach that falsehood make Jesus' death seem useless and they will be punished for it. Jesus said those who try to get truth by any other way than the way He has provided will not get into His Kingdom in heaven at all. They will have to come back on earth and learn about Him and about God's Plan.

"Shortly after this the people came to a city at the border of the country of Edom where Esau's children lived. Moses sent them a message asking that they might be permitted to pass through the land of the Edomites, as the children of Esau were called. They said they would not harm anything or go through the fields but would stay on the roads. God had told them not to fight with the Edomites for they were also children of Isaac or Israel. The Edomites refused to let them pass through their land and sent an army to drive them away, so they had to go away round through the hills.

"After some time they came to a mountain and God spoke to Moses and told him the time had come for Aaron to die. God told Moses to take Aaron and his son, Eleazer, up into the mountain and to take the High Priest's garments from Aaron and put them on his son, who would be High Priest in Aaron's place. Moses obeyed and Aaron died on the mountain.

"They travelled on through a hilly and unpleasant country and the people became discouraged and began to grumble and scold. The manna still came every morning so they had plenty to eat but they became tired of the food God sent and there was nothing they could use for food in the country they were passing through. They grew still more discontented but they would not let Moses hear them scolding. They forgot that God can hear at all times. Moses did not know why big snakes soon began to come into the camp and bite the discontented people. The bite of the snakes was poison and many people died before the Israelites realised that it was a punishment for their discontent and grumbling, and some of the people went to Moses and confessed to him that they had been complaining about God's leading, and asked Moses to pray to God to drive the snakes away and forgive them.

"Moses went to God and told Him all about it and God told him to make a cross of wood and also a copper snake, and to take the snake and fasten it to the cross and that whoever of the people would look at it would live."

"What a funny way to cure a snakebite, Mummy!"

"We could not understand it if we did not know the symbols of the Bible, dear. The snakes were a picture of sin and showed that even down at the end of the age people would not be satisfied with the truth of God's Word, which the manner pictured, and so God would take His favour away from the people and sin would come amongst us and



many would suffer. The copper snake pictured Jesus, who took the form of sinful man and died on the cross for us.”

“How can we tell what it means, Mummy?”

“Jesus said, ‘*As Moses lifted up the serpent in the wilderness, even so must the Son of Man be lifted up.*’ So He told us Himself that the copper serpent pictured Him.

“Why did Moses not just put a real snake on the cross, Mummy?”

“Because Jesus was not a sinner really. He was pure and perfect, and copper pictured a pure human being. He was accused of breaking the law and was called a sinner. People thought He was one. When the people looked at the copper snake, the real snakes left them and went away and no matter how badly they had been bitten they got better. So no matter how bad we may be, if we turn to Jesus and trust Him we will be made well and sin will leave us.

“Several years had passed and the people were growing stronger and were learning to obey God. When they came to another place where many people were living and the people refused them permission to go through their country and came out to fight them, they won another victory over them and took their cities. They lived there for some time in the cities they had taken from the Amorites. Then they went on to Moab and the people were afraid of them for they heard how they had taken the cities of the Amorites. The king of Moab had heard how God was with the people and he knew that there was a man not far away who claimed to be a prophet of God. He thought that if he could get this prophet to curse the Israelites in the name of God, he could drive them away. Perhaps you will remember the story for I have told you of it before. The prophet was called Balaam.”

“Was that the man who had the donkey that talked, Mummy?”

“Yes, dear, that was the man. He wanted to please the king of Moab for he had sent word that he would give him a lot of money if he would call down a curse on Israel from the God of heaven whom he claimed to serve. Balaam wanted that money but he was afraid to disobey God. He asked God what he should do and God said, ‘You must not go to the king or curse the people for I have blessed them.’

“Balaam refused to go but he felt pretty bad over it for he wanted the money.”

“I guess he was one of those you spoke of, Mummy, who loved money more than God”, Linnet said.

“Yes, dear, Balaam claimed to be a true servant of God but he really loved money and a good position better. He had obeyed God and told the king he would not go but down in his heart he was angry and resentful and kept wondering if there was not some way he could get the money and still obey God. He did not obey God for love but for fear of what would happen if he disobeyed. The king would not take his answer but sent messengers back to the prophet and offered him more money. Balaam knew what God’s wishes were but he went back and asked again what he should do.

“God knew his heart and so He said, ‘Very well, Balaam, you may go but take care you say only what I tell you to.’ Balaam was quite pleased and he got ready to go at once. He felt sure he would find some way to get honour and wealth from the king without actually disobeying God. Now God will not have that kind of service so He sent an angel to meet Balaam. The Prophet was riding along quite happy when suddenly his donkey stopped and turned right off the road and went through the field.”

“Why did he do that, Mummy?”

“Because he saw something the prophet could not see. An angel was standing there with a sword in his hand to kill the prophet. The angel went on ahead and stopped in a narrow place. This time the donkey could not go off the road so he turned into the bank and hurt the prophet’s foot. The prophet was very angry and scolded the donkey but the angel went on again to a place where it was impossible for the donkey to turn aside. When the donkey got there he just stopped and did not move. Balaam got very angry and started to beat the animal. What do you think the donkey did then?”

“I know, Mummy. He turned right round and asked the prophet why he was hitting him”, Linnet said.

“Yes, dear, and Balaam answered before he realised that donkeys cannot talk. He said, ‘Because you are so stubborn and disobedient.’ Then the donkey said, ‘I have worked for you for years. Have I ever refused to obey you before?’ Then the prophet suddenly realised that the donkey was talking. He looked up then and saw the angel and he fell on his knees and hid his face. The angel said, ‘Your donkey has more sense than you have. I would have killed you but for him.’ Balaam was ashamed and frightened for he knew that he had planned to try and get the money the king offered. He asked God to forgive him and said he would go back home again, but the angel said, ‘You may go on but see you do not speak a word that God does not give you.’”

“I guess the prophet obeyed God then, Mummy. He would be afraid not to.”

“He obeyed all right and when the king asked him to curse Israel he gave God’s blessing instead say, ‘I cannot curse those whom God had blessed, and God has blessed Israel.’ Then he told the king that God would make a great nation out of the Israelites, and he added a prophecy about Jesus, saying, ‘A long time from now a star will rise out of Jacob and a sceptre from Israel and shall smite Moab....and out of Jacob shall He come who will have the dominion over all the earth.’

“The king was very angry and it seems that when he sent the prophet back without any money Balaam, still trying to gain the wealth the king promised, gave him some advice that God had not said to give, telling the king not to try to fight the Israelites but to make friends with them and get them to marry the Moabite women and turn them away from God. Because of this God punished Balaam, for many of the Israelites were led to worship idols and died for their sin.

“Now, dear, I had intended to finish the story of the pictures but there is not time. Tonight we will just take for our verse the prophecy of Balaam, ‘*Out of Jacob shall He come who shall have the dominion.*’ (Numbers 24:19). You may write it in your little book and mark it in your Bible too”, Mrs Grey said as she put her work away.

Linnet gathered up her toys and prepared to go to rest. "Mummy", she said, "Was Balaam a picture too?"

"Yes, dear, in some ways he was. The Apostle Jude speaks of those who *'despise dominion and speak evil of God's people,'* or as we would say, those who are disobedient to God while claiming to be His children and who say mean things about those who are His true servants. He says of them, *'They have gone in the way of Cain and followed the error of Balaam to gain a reward for themselves.'* In this way he shows us that Balaam was a picture of those who claim to be God's children but are not, and who teach wrong doctrines in place of God's Word and so cause those who wish to be good to believe things that are not true."

"What kind of things, Mummy?"

"That God is hard and cruel and will burn all who do not obey their orders or send them to a terrible place where they must be punished in dreadful ways for their mistakes for thousands of years. This is one of the false teachings. Another is that men cannot die, that even God cannot destroy them and that when they seem to die they just go to heaven or to a place of punishment. Then there is the teaching that God and Jesus and the holy spirit are all one. Those are the teachings that came from Nimrod. Balaam persuaded the king to let the Israelites live in his country and to get them to believe the false teachings of the heathen and worship their idols and marry their daughters. Many of the people were deceived and many died because they worshipped the false gods. Both the false teachers and those who were untrue to God were destroyed. So all who teach men untruths in place of God's Word while they claim to serve Him will be punished and all who believe those teachings and turn away from God after they have given themselves to God and promised to obey Him will be punished too."

"Do you mean that all those who do not believe the truth will be punished, Mummy?"

"No, dear. Only those who know God and are truly His children. God did not punish the people of Moab who really believed those things. They were not to blame but those who set out to turn the Israelites from God were punished as was Balaam, who was willing to disobey God for money, and so were the Israelites who knew God and turned away from Him to serve false gods after they had promised not to", Mrs Grey explained. "God will teach all men to know Him when the Kingdom comes and then those who are disobedient will be punished. Now, dear, off to bed with you. That's enough questions for one night."

## **Chapter 29: The Death of a Great Leader**

Right gladly, by the love of God surrounded,  
Moses laid his weary body down to rest.  
He fell asleep, by no regrets confounded  
Upon our loving Father's gentle breast.  
For Moses was an old and weary man,  
Full six score years had passed above his head,  
The active warfare was too much for him.  
God knew the dear old man was better dead.

He knew the future held great joys for him.  
His reward had been provided in God's plan.

Then – with his strength renewed, no longer dim  
His aged eyes – Moses shall rise again,  
A perfect man. Lead Israel to the Promised Land  
As earthly representative of Christ.  
How many disappointments he escaped,  
How much of sorrow God has spared him from  
While sleeping there, on lofty mountains, draped  
With sunset glories through the years of time.

#### Types and Shadows

“A winter’s night, a nice fire and a Bible story”, Linnet exclaimed one evening. “What could be nicer, Mummy?”

“Is that a new method of approach, young lady?” Mrs Grey looked up from her book, for she had been reading, and smiled at her eager little daughter.

“I don’t know what you mean, but I do want a story, Mummy, please. Everyone is busy and we are alone. Was your book interesting?”

“No, dear. I was just looking at pictures. I should be knitting anyway and I can always knit and talk. Bring your dolly here to the fire and get me my knitting and we will see what we can do for you.”

“Here you are, Mummy. You told me about Balaam last night and about how Aaron died. What happened then?”

“Well, dear, about that time Moses sent around and had the people counted. We would say today that he ‘took a census’ to see if all the people who had been over twenty when they left Egypt had died. You remember God had said that not one of the trouble-makers would ever enter Canaan. Moses found that there was not one person over sixty except Joshua and Caleb. These two had been the faithful spies and they were now the leaders of the people. Moses knew that the time had come to take Canaan.

“Now Moses called all the people together to bid them goodbye, for God had told him that his work was finished and he must make Joshua the leader of the people. During the forty years they had been living in the wilderness Moses had carefully copied all the tablets that had been given into his hands and which he had brought from Egypt. Then he had himself written the story of the journey through the wilderness, explaining all the sins of the people and all the great things God had done for them. In addition he had made a copy of the whole law and the rules God had given them for the control of the people. Moses knew his work was ended and he was glad for he was very tired.

“He gave the people their last orders. Then God spoke to him again and said, ‘I have just one thing more for you to do and then I will let you rest. The people of Midian have become very wicked and have caused my people much trouble. You must punish them.’

“So Moses gathered an army and fought with the people of Midian and defeated them and destroyed their cities. Then Moses gave all the books he had written to the people and called them all together and had a long talk with them. He reminded them of all God’s goodness and their own sinfulness and explained the laws of God to them more fully. Moses had written a long poem about the dealings of God with them and he read

this poem to them, then he gave them God's blessing and told them that they must obey Joshua and do everything he told them for God had appointed Joshua to lead them to the Promised Land of Canaan.

"Then Moses, the great leader, said goodbye to them and went away all alone. Slowly and quietly he climbed up the high mountain that is called Nebo. Higher and higher he climbed. He was in no hurry for he knew that he would never come down again. His work was all finished and another man was now leader of the people. Nebo is a very high mountain and from the top of it one can see much of the Land of Canaan. Moses climbed on till he stood on the very top of Mount Nebo and there he looked out over the Land of Canaan. By and by he sat down there to rest, for he was an old man and very tired. Perhaps he closed his eyes to rest them from the glare of the sun. He was thinking of the way God had led the people and of what a beautiful country this was to which he had been permitted to lead them. He thought of how happy they would be living there after the hardships of the desert. Then he dropped off to sleep. I think the angel of God was very close to him as he sat there. Perhaps he talked to him and told him of the coming days when the Kingdom of God would rule over the whole earth. We cannot tell for Moses never wakened up from that sleep."

"Do you mean that Moses died, Mummy?" Linnet asked. She had a healthy child's dislike of death but not the fear that is so common among people. She had always known that death is just a sleep. "Poor Moses. It must have seemed hard to him to have to die up there all alone."

"Moses never knew anything about it, dear. Death is like that. Most people will never know they died till they are wakened up again in the Kingdom. Like Moses, most people just fall asleep and do not wake up again. They drift off from their dreams into a deeper sleep where they do not even dream. It is the stories about the punishment after death that has caused people to be so afraid of dying, and those stories are untrue.

"The Bible tells us that God buried the body of Moses there in a valley on the mountain side. How or where, no one knows. Perhaps there was a small landslide that covered it up. The people mourned for him for thirty days."

"Mummy, when Moses wakes up will he be up there on that same mountain?"

"It is most likely that he will, dear. We can imagine, from what we know of God's plan, about what will happen. The last thing Moses knew was when he lay down there to rest for a while before he went any farther. Perhaps he dreamed a bit at first, then he fell so sound asleep that the years passed by like a moment. If he had been down in the plains or in the valleys there might have been changes during the years, but the mountain tops do not change. There are no trees, unless some little stunted pines, and winter and summer go by bringing snow or rain in their season.

"The time will come when the Kingdom is all ready to be set up on the earth. All God's 'Little Flock' will have fallen asleep and wakened up in the Kingdom to take the place God has for them. The great war that must come will break and turn into revolution. All the nations will be broken into pieces and the Jews will be waiting for their Messiah, for by that time they will, at least some of them will, understand what is happening. Then God will save the Jews from their enemies and the time to waken the old Prophets will have come at last. Moses will wake up again and it will seem to him that he has been

asleep only for a few minutes. Perhaps at first he will feel disappointed and think, 'Why, I thought I was going to die. I thought all my work was done. I do not want to have to lead those quarrelsome and disobedient people any longer.' Then he will realise that he does not feel old and weary any more. He will feel young and strong and rested and will sit up and look around. The last climb up the mountain will seem like a dream till he sees that he is lying just where he was. The sun will be shining down and warming him and he will get up and look around. Perhaps he will see a stranger sitting near who will smile and say, 'Well, Moses, do you feel better for that nice long sleep?'

"Then Moses will see that it is the angel of the Lord. He may say, 'But I thought I was going to die here. I feel better than I have for years. How long have I been sleeping?'

"Then perhaps the angel will smile and say, 'Just about three thousand years, Moses. You did die and now the time has come for you to wake up and lead the people into the Promised Land.'

"Did not Joshua do that? I left him to lead the people', Moses will ask.

"Yes, Joshua led the people into Canaan but they would not obey my laws and they broke their covenant with God until He had to fulfil His promise and send them the great punishment, the double you warned them would come. They were driven out of Canaan and were forced to wander in the world for as long as they had enjoyed God's favour. The blessing of God was given to the Gentile races but they were no better than your people. Now God has punished them for their sins and has returned His favour to Israel, and He has sent the "Greater Prophet" you told them about to rule over them. That Great Prophet will rule over them from the heavens and will bless them and all the people of the world through them. He has sent me to waken you and you shall be a prince to lead them together with all the other faithful men of those days. You will take your orders from the Great Prophet, just as you took them from God's angel in the cloud. He will be the real King but the people will not see Him. Already I have wakened Abraham and Isaac and Noah and Enoch and they are waiting your coming for they will also be assistants in ruling the people.'

"Then they would join the other great men and then they would all learn about everything that has happened in the world since they fell asleep. They would learn about the new inventions and discoveries, and would take over the work of teaching the people about God and His great Plan. So they will lead them into the real Promised Land of which Canaan was only a picture. Moses will not have so much trouble with the people as he did in the wilderness. He will not grow old and weary, either."

"How very wonderful it will be, Mummy. Will it be very long, do you think?"

"No, dear. Already the conditions in the world are working up to bring the trouble which will end the present order. A few more years and it will all be over. Then the Kingdom will come and bring all the blessings. That is why I want you to learn all you can now about Jesus for there will be teachers needed everywhere."

"Moses' life was all in forties, was it not, Mummy? Forty years in Egypt and forty years in the country and forty years leading the people", Linnnet remarked thoughtfully.

"Yes, dear. The forty-year periods of Moses' life seem to have a meaning too. You remember he pictured the Law Covenant? Well, that Law was in effect with the Jews for 1845 years. Then they lost God's favour and it was given to the Gentiles for the same period of time. Now the Gentile nations have lost God's favour too, for they did not keep His laws either."

"But Mummy, it's well over 1900 years since Jesus came. You told me that was how our years were counted."

"And so they are, dear. But there was a 'harvest time' between the years when God let the Jewish people have His favour and the beginning of the years of favour to the Gentiles."

"What do you mean by a harvest time, Mummy?"

"Well, dear, you know that when the farmer sows his seeds in the spring he has to wait all summer for the grain to grow. Then in the fall he cuts the grain and 'thrashes' it. Then when the grain is all beaten loose from the stalk, he stores it away to be made into flour. That is called a harvest. Jesus said the world was His field and He sowed good grain in it, but an enemy (that was Satan) sowed bad seed that would grow into tares, a very troublesome weed that looks very much like wheat. Jesus told us the story of how the weeds grew right among the wheat and He would not let His servants pull them out for fear some wheat would be harmed. Then came the harvest. The wheat was full of good big seeds and the heads drooped but the tares or weeds had tiny seeds and the heads stood straight up. He said, *'In the harvest I will say to my reapers, gather the tares into bundles for burning but gather my wheat into my barn.'*"

"I remember now, Mummy. You told me that story not long ago. The wheat are the true Christians who had the truth of God's Word and the tares pictured the people who believed the false teachings which Satan planted."

"That is right, dear. When the harvest time came Jesus was going to be present and He would get His angels or messengers to gather the good wheat or the true Christians into His true Church, and all those who had grown from Satan's errors into bundles to be destroyed."

"But the people were not to be all destroyed, were they, Mummy? They did not know any better."

"No, dear. The fire was to change them from tares, imitation Christians, and show them to be really just sinners, following the false teachings of Satan. You remember the coin that I showed you that was no good? The fire turned it into a chunk of lead. That is all it ever was, though it had been made to look like a silver coin. So the trouble will show everyone that many who pretended to be followers of Jesus were ready to do any terrible thing Satan suggested; to even kill their brethren and destroy their homes and to hate people whom Jesus had said they must love. The trouble just burns away their false pretence and shows them for what they are. Many will fall asleep in the trouble but they will not be **destroyed**. Jesus will set up His Kingdom and wake the good and faithful men of old to teach the people what is right and true. Then He will wake the sinners, for Jesus died to save them too, and when they come to know God as we know Him they will not be sinners any more. God will find a good use for the tares. You know,

on the farms the people take the good wheat and then they burn the chaff. But lately men have found that they can use the chaff and stalks to make a fine paper. So we see what Jesus meant by the harvest time. There were seventy years of harvest for the Jewish people while Jesus and His disciples were taking out the true Christians that were the wheat in that harvest. Then the Jewish nation was destroyed and the people scattered. Their harvest time pictured what Jesus was going to do to their nation.”

“How was it different, Mummy?”

“They had no big machines to cut their grain. The people all went into the fields with little sickles. They cut off the tares and gathered them into bundles and tied them up. These bundles were taken away and burned. The wheat was gathered in handfuls by the reapers and the stalks cut off close to the ground with the sickle. These handfuls were laid on the ground in neat rows and the reapers were very careful to see there were no tares among them. Men came along with carts drawn by oxen and took the wheat carefully to a threshing ground. Here there was a big enclosure where the ground was very smooth and hard. All the grain was piled up there and when it was gathered the people drove the oxen over it with flat carts to trample out the grain. Men shook the bundles well, and the tramping of the oxen loosened it. Soon all the grain was at the bottom of the pile and the chaff and stalks were lying on top, all ground and broken up fine. Then the owner of the field and his chief helpers slept all night in the threshing floor so they would be there in the very early morning. In the East there is always a strong wind in the very early morning. Then the owner of the field took a long fork and tossed the chaff up and the wind would carry the chaff and straw away, but the grain would fall to the ground. They gathered every bit of wheat and took it to the barn.

“In the seventy years of the harvest of the Jewish nation Jesus and the disciples were the reapers. They taught the truth and it made the false-hearted people gather together to oppose Jesus and His followers. The good people saw how evil their actions were and gathered together. They were the wheat. Then a great trouble came to the nation. That was the wind that scattered the chaff, the false or evil-natured Jews, everywhere. God gathered His own people into His true Church.

“Now we are living in the harvest of the Gentile age. The truth has gathered all the people who claim to be Christians but are not into bundles, and the true Children of God have been drawn out from among them by the great message of the presence of Jesus. The world today is the threshing-floor where the trouble will blow away the chaff of worldly interests from God’s people. But the fire of the war and revolution that will follow will burn the bundles of tares.”

“How will it burn the, Mummy?”

Well, dear, they will show that they are not really God’s children by the things they will do. They will fight and kill other people and will do all they can to bring death and destruction to others. Many of them will be killed in the trouble but this is not what is meant by the fire that burns the tares. The fire will destroy the tares by showing that they are not wheat, for they do not love or obey God’s laws. They will then be known by everyone to be tares or imitation Christians. They may seem to be very fine people now, but God is going to show very plainly who will obey His laws and who will not. There will be a great many people killed in the great time of trouble for God has said that the dead of the Lord at that day will be from one end of the world to the other.”



“But they will all be wakened up again when the Kingdom comes, won't they, Mummy?”

“Yes, darling, all who are in their graves shall hear the Word of the Lord and come forth. Then Jesus will be reigning over the world and He will teach all people to obey God's laws. First He will teach those who are living after the trouble is over and then He will wake those who died last and restore them to their friends who are waiting for them. Then He will wake others as the world is ready for them. In this way Jesus, who was pictured by Joshua, will lead all the people who have ever lived into the Promised Land and fulfil the promise that *'The desire of all nations shall come.'*

“Now, dearest, we have finished the first Book of God's Pictures. Perhaps some day we will have time to look at the rest of the Pictures in the Old Testament. There are many of them and some are very lovely. But it's time for my wee girl to get some rest.” Mrs Grey kissed her little girl goodnight.

So, dear reader, we too must put the stories aside for a time. If they have been of any assistance in clearing up doubts and fears, I am very glad. God's promises are sure and not one of them shall fail.

Until the Kingdom comes in all its glory, may God keep you all who put your trust in Him. May it be truly said of all such, *“The Eternal God is thy refuge and underneath are the Everlasting Arms.”*